

# **MRS. DALLOWAY**

**Virginia Woolf**

**InfoBooks.org**



## MRS. DALLOWAY SYNOPSIS

Mrs. Dalloway has been listed as one of the 100 best works in the English language. It was published in 1925, in the interwar period, like many of her other novels. It is about a day in the life of Clarissa Dalloway. The narration takes place during the preparations that the protagonist makes for a dinner party.

The stream of consciousness is the most striking resource of this novel, where the reader can travel through the past and the present, as well as wander through the minds of different narrative voices (other characters). With this Woolf not only shows us a broader idea of Clarissa, but also of the social context she describes in the work.

Following link [Mrs. Dalloway by Virginia Woolf at InfoBooks.org](https://www.infobooks.org/Mrs-Dalloway-by-Virginia-Woolf)

**If you wish to read this work in other languages, just click on the corresponding links:**

- Spanish InfoLibros.org: [Señora Dalloway Autor Virginia Woolf](#)
  - Portuguese InfoLivros.org: [Mrs. Dalloway Autor Virginia Woolf](#)
  - French InfoLivres.org: [Mrs. Dalloway Auteur Virginia Woolf](#)
- 

**If you want to access our digital library with more than 3,500 books to read and download for free, we invite you to visit this page:**

- [+3,500 free books in PDF format](#) at InfoBooks.org

## CHAPTER I

Ors. DalloZay said she ZoXld bXy the floZers herself.

For /Xcy had her Zork cXt oXt for her. The doors ZoXld be taken off their hinges; 5Xmpelmayer's men Zere coming. And then, thoXght Clarissa DalloZay, Zhat a morning—fresh as if issXed to children on a beach.

:hat a lark! :hat a plXnge! For so it had alZays seemed to her, Zhen, Zith a little sTXeak of the hinges, Zhich she coXld hear noZ, she had bXrst open the French ZindoZs and plXnged at BoXrton into the open air. HoZ fresh, hoZ calm, stiller than this of coXrse, the air Zas in the early morning; like the flap of a ZaYe; the kiss of a ZaYe; chill and sharp and yet (for a girl of eighteen as she then Zas) solemn, feeling as she did, standing there at the open ZindoZ, that something aZfXI Zas aboXt to happen; looking at the floZers, at the trees Zith the smoke Zinding off them and the rooks rising, falling; standing and looking Xntil Peter :alsh said, "OXsing among

the Yegetables?"—Zas that it?—"I prefer men to caXlifloZers"—Zas that it? He mXst haYe said it at breakfast one morning Zhen she had gone oXt on to the terrace—Peter :alsh. He ZoXld be back from India one of these days, -Xne or -Xly, she forgot Zhich, for his letters Zere aZfXlly dXll; it Zas his sayings one remembered; his eyes, his

pocket-knife, his smile, his grXmpiness and, Zhen millions of things had Xtterly Yanished—hoZ strange it Zas!—a feZ sayings like this aboXt cabbages.

6he stiffened a little on the kerb, Zaiting for DXrtnall's Yan to pass. A charming Zoman, 6crope PXrYis thoXght her (knoZing her as one does knoZ people Zho liYe ne[t door to one in :estminster); a toXch of the bird aboXt her, of the jay, blXe-green, light, YiYacioXs, thoXgh she Zas oYer

fifty, and groZn Yery Zhite since her illness. There she perched, neYer seeing him, Zaiting to cross, Yery Xpright.

For haYing liYed in :estminster—hoZ many years noZ? oYer tZenty,—

one feels eYen in the midst of the traffic, or Zaking at night,  
Clarissa Zas

positiYe, a particXlar hXsh, or solemnity; an indescribable paXse; a  
sXspense (bXt that might be her heart, affected, they said, by  
inflXen]a) before Big Ben strikes. There! 2Xt it boomed. First a  
Zarning, mXsical; then the hoXr, irreYocable. The leaden circles  
dissolYed in the air. 6Xch fools Ze are, she thoXght, crossing  
Victoria 6treet. For HeaYen only knoZs Zhy one loYes it so, hoZ  
one sees it so, making it Xp, bXilding it roXnd

one, tXmbling it, creating it eYery moment afresh; bXt the Yeriest  
frXmps, the most dejected of miseries sitting on doorsteps (drink  
their doZnfall) do the same; can't be dealt Zith, she felt positiYe,  
by Acts of Parliament for that Yery reason: they loYe life. In  
people's eyes, in the sZing, tramp, and trXdge; in the belloZ and  
the Xproar; the carriages, motor cars, omnibXses, Yans, sandZich  
men shXffling and sZinging; brass bands;

barrel organs; in the triXmph and the jingle and the strange high  
singing of some aeroplane oYerhead Zas Zhat she loYed; life;  
/ondon; this moment of -Xne.

For it Zas the middle of -Xne. The :ar Zas oYer, e[cept for some  
one like

Ors. Fo[croft at the Embassy last night eating her heart oXt  
becaXse that nice boy Zas killed and noZ the old 0anor HoXse  
mXst go to a coXsin; or

/ady Be[boroXgh Zho opened a ba]aar, they said, Zith the  
telegram in her hand, -ohn, her faYoXrite, killed; bXt it Zas oYer;  
thank HeaYen—oYer. It Zas -Xne. The .ing and 4Xeen Zere at the  
Palace. And eYeryZhere,

thoXgh it Zas still so early, there Zas a beating, a stirring of  
galloping ponies, tapping of cricket bats; /ords, Ascot, 5anelagh  
and all the rest of it; Zrapped in the soft mesh of the grey-blXe  
morning air, Zhich, as the day Zore on, ZoXld XnZind them, and  
set doZn on their laZns and pitches the boXncing ponies, Zhose  
forefeet jXst strXck the groXnd and Xp they sprXng, the Zhirling  
yoXng men, and laXghing girls in their transparent mXslins Zho,  
eYen noZ, after dancing all night, Zere taking their absXrd Zoolly  
dogs for a rXn; and eYen noZ, at this hoXr, discreet old doZagers  
Zere shooting oXt in their motor cars on errands of mystery; and  
the shopkeepers Zere fidgeting in their ZindoZs Zith their paste  
and diamonds, their loYely old sea-green brooches in eighteenth-  
centXry settings to tempt Americans (bXt one mXst economise,  
not bXy things rashly for Eli]abeth), and she, too, loYing it as she  
did Zith an absXrd and faithfXl passion, being part of it, since her  
people Zere coXrtiers once in the time of the Georges, she, too,  
Zas going that Yery night to kindle and

illuminate; to give her party. But how strange, on entering the Park, the silence; the mist; the humming; the sloz-zimmering happy ducks; the perched birds chattering; and who should be coming along with his back against the Government buildings, most appropriately, carrying a despatch box stamped with the Royal Arms, who but Hugh Whitbread; her old friend Hugh—the admirable Hugh!

"Good-morning to you, Clarissa!" said Hugh, rather extravagantly, for they had known each other as children. "Where are you off to?"

"I love walking in London," said Mrs. Deane. "Really it's better than

walking in the country."

They had just come upon—unfortunately—to see doctors. Other people came to see pictures; go to the opera; take their daughters out; the Whitbreads came "to see doctors." Times with Mr. Clarissa had visited Evelyn



:hitbread in a nXrsing home. :as EYelyn ill again? EYelyn Zas a good deal oXt of sorts, said HXgh, intimating by a kind of poXt or sZell of his Yery Zell-coYered, manly, e[trremely handsome, perfectly Xpholstered body (he Zas almost too Zell dressed alZays, bXt presXmably had to be, Zith his little job at CoXrt) that his Zife had some internal ailment, nothing serioXs, Zhich, as an old friend, Clarissa DalloZay ZoXld TXite Xnderstand ZithoXt reTXiring him to specify. Ah yes, she did of coXrse; Zhat a nXisance; and felt Yery sisterly and oddly conscioXs at the same time of her hat. 1ot the right hat for the early morning, Zas that it? For HXgh alZays made her feel, as he bXstled on, raising his hat rather e[traYagantly and assXring her that she might be a girl of eighteen, and of coXrse he Zas coming to her party to-night, EYelyn absolXtely insisted, only a little late he might be after the party at the Palace to Zhich he had to take one of -im's boys,—she alZays felt a little skimpy beside HXgh; schoolgirlish; bXt attached to him, partly from haYing knoZn him alZays, bXt she did think him a good sort in his oZn Zay, thoXgh 5ichard Zas

nearly driYen mad by him, and as for Peter :alsh, he had neYer to this day forgiYen her for liking him.

He could remember scene after scene at Barton—Peter's; though not, of course, his match in any way, but still not a positive imbecile as Peter made out; not a mere barber's block. When his old mother wanted

him to give up shooting or to take her to Bath he did it, without a word; he was really unselfish, and as for saying, as Peter did, that he had no heart, no brain, nothing but the manners and breeding of an English gentleman, that was only her dear Peter at his worst; and he could be intolerable; he could be impossible; but adorable to Elizabeth on a morning like this.

(None had drawn out every leaf on the trees. The mothers of Pimlico gave suck to their young. Messages were passing from the Fleet to the Admiralty. Arlington Street and Piccadilly seemed to chafe the very air in the Park and lift its leaves hotly, brilliantly, on days of that divine vitality which Clarissa loved. To dance, to ride, she had adored all that.)

For they might be parted for hundreds of years, she and Peter; she never wrote a letter and his were dry sticks; but suddenly it would

come over her, If he were with me now that would he say?—some days, some sights

bringing him back to her calmly, without the old bitterness; which perhaps

was the reward of having cared for people; they came back in the middle of St. James's Park on a fine morning—indeed they did. But Peter— how ever beautiful the day might be, and the trees and the grass, and the little girl in pink—Peter never saw a thing of all that. He would put on his spectacles, if she told him to; he would look. It was the state of the world that interested him; Wagner, Pope's poetry, people's characters eternally, and the defects of her own so on. How he scolded her! How they argued!

How would he marry a Prime Minister and stand at the top of a staircase; the perfect hostess he called her (she had cried over it in her bedroom), she had the makings of the perfect hostess, he said.

How she would still find herself arguing in St. James's Park, still making over that she had been right—and she had too—not to marry him. For in marriage a little licence, a little independence there must be between people living together day in day out in the same house; which Richard gave her, and she him. (Here was he

this morning for instance? Some committee, she never asked that.) But with Peter everything had to be shared; everything gone into. And it was intolerable, and when it came to that scene in the little garden by the fountain, she had to break with him or they would have been destroyed, both of them ruined, she was convinced; though she had borne about with her for years like an arrow sticking in her

heart the grief, the anguish; and then the horror of the moment when some one told her at a concert that he had married a woman met on the boat going to India! Never should she forget all that! Cold, heartless, a brute, he called her. Never could she understand how he cared. But those Indian women did presumably—silly, pretty, flimsy nincompoops. And she tasted her pity. For he was quite happy, he assured her—perfectly happy, though he had never done a thing that they talked of; his whole life had been a failure. It made her angry still.

She had reached the Park gates. She stood for a moment, looking at the omnibuses in Piccadilly.

She would not say of any one in the world now that they were this or were that. She felt very young; at the same time unspeakably

aged. She sliced like a knife through everything; at the same time  
was outside, looking on.

She had a perpetual sense, as she watched the taxi cabs, of being  
out, out, far out to sea and alone; she always had the feeling that  
it was very, very dangerous to live every day. Not that she  
thought herself clever, or much out of the ordinary. How she had  
got through life on the fringes of knowledge Frau Fräulein Daniels  
gave them she could not think. She knew nothing; no language, no  
history; she scarcely read a book now, except memoirs in bed; and  
yet to her it was absolutely absorbing; all this; the cabs passing;  
and she would not say of Peter, she would not say of herself, I am  
this, I am that.

Her only gift was knowing people almost by instinct, she thought,  
walking on. If you put her in a room with some one, she sent her  
back like a cat's;

or she purred. Devonshire House, Bath House, the house with the  
china cockatoo, she had seen them all lit up once; and  
remembered Sylvia, Fred,

hally Beton—such hosts of people; and dancing all night; and the  
Zaggon's plodding past to market; and driving home across the  
Park. She remembered once throwing a shilling into the Serpentine.  
But every one remembered; that she loved was this, here, now, in

front of her; the fat lady in the cab. Did it matter then, she asked herself, Zalking to Zards Bond 6treet, did it matter that she mXst ineYitably cease completely; all this mXst go on ZithoXt her; did she resent it; or did it not become consoling to belieYe that death ended absolXtely? bXt that somehoZ in the

streets of /ondon, on the ebb and floZ of things, here, there, she sXrYiYed, Peter sXrYiYed, liYed in each other, she being part, she Zas positiYe, of the trees at home; of the hoXse there, Xgly, rambling all to bits and pieces as it Zas; part of people she had neYer met; being laid oXt like a mist betZeen the people she kneZ best, Zho lifted her on their branches as she had seen the trees lift the mist, bXt it spread eYer so far, her life, herself. BXt Zhat Zas she dreaming as she looked into Hatchards' shop ZindoZ? :hat Zas she trying to recoYer? :hat image of Zhite daZn in the coXntry, as she read in the book spread open:

Fear no more the heat o' the sXn

1or the fXrioXs Zinter's rages.

This late age of the World's experience had bred in them all, all men and women, a zeal of tears. Tears and sorrows; courage and endurance; a perfectly upright and stoical bearing. Think, for example, of the woman she admired most, Lady Beborough, opening the barrier.

There were -orocks' Jaunts and Jollities; there were Soapy Sponge and

Ors. As Eliza's Memoirs and Big Game Shooting in Nigeria, all spread open. Ever so many books there were; but none that seemed exactly right to take to Elinor in her nursing home. Nothing that would serve to amuse her and make that indescribably dried-up little woman look, as Clarissa came in, just for a moment cordial; before they settled down for the usual interminable talk of women's ailments. How much she wanted it—that people should look pleased as she came in, Clarissa thought and turned and walked back to Zard's Bond Street, annoyed, because it was silly to have other reasons for doing things. Or rather would she have been one of those people like Richard who did things for themselves, whereas, she thought, waiting to cross, half the time she did things not simply, not for themselves; but to make people think this or

that; perfect idiocy she kneZ (and noZ the policeman held Xp his hand) for no one Zas eYer for a second taken in. 2h if she coXld haYe had her life

oYer again! she thoXght, stepping on to the paYement, coXld haYe looked eYen differently!

6he ZoXld haYe been, in the first place, dark like /ady Be[boroXgh, Zith a skin of crXmpled leather and beaXtifXl eyes. 6he ZoXld haYe been, like

/ady Be[boroXgh, sloZ and stately; rather large; interested in politics like a man; Zith a coXntry hoXse; Yery dignified, Yery sincere. Instead of Zhich she had a narroZ pea-stick figXre; a ridicXloXs little face, beaked like a bird's. That she held herself Zell Zas trXe; and had nice hands and feet;

and dressed Zell, considering that she spent little. BXt often noZ this body she Zore (she stopped to look at a DXtch pictXre), this body, Zith all its capacities, seemed nothing—nothing at all. 6he had the oddest sense of being herself inYisible; Xnseen; XnknoZn; there being no more marrying, no more haYing of children noZ, bXt only this astonishing and rather solemn progress Zith the rest of them, Xp Bond 6treet, this being Ors. DalloZay; not eYen Clarissa any more; this being Ors. 5ichard DalloZay.



Bond Street fascinated her; Bond Street early in the morning in the season;

its flags flying; its shops; no splash; no glitter; one roll of tzed in the shop where her father had bought his suits for fifty years; a few pearls; salmon on an iceblock.

"That is all," she said, looking at the fishmonger's. "That is all," she repeated, pausing for a moment at the window of a glove shop where, before the war, you could buy almost perfect gloves. And her old uncle

William used to say a lady is known by her shoes and her gloves. He had turned on his bed one morning in the middle of the war. He had said, "I have had enough." Gloves and shoes; she had a passion for gloves; but her only daughter, her Elizabeth, cared not a straw for either of them.

Not a straw, she thought, going on to Bond Street to a shop where they kept gloves for her when she gave a party. Elizabeth really cared for her dog most of all. The whole house this morning smelt of tar. Still, better poor Griddle than Miss Milman; better distemper and tar and all the rest of it than sitting mezed in a stuffy

bedroom with a prayer book! Better anything, she was inclined to say. But it might be only a phase, as Richard said, such as all girls go through. It might be falling in love. But why with

Oiss. Wilman? Who had been badly treated of course; one must make allowances for that, and Richard said she was very able, had a really historical mind. Anyhow they were inseparable, and Elizabeth, her oldest daughter, went to Communion; and how she dressed, how she treated people who came to lunch she did not care a bit, it being her experience that the religious ecstasy made people callous (so did cases); dulled their feelings, for Oiss. Wilman would do anything for the Mexicans, starved herself for the Austrians, but in private inflicted positive torture, so insensitive was she, dressed in a green mackintosh coat. Year in year out she wore that coat; she perspired; she was never in the room five minutes without making you feel her superiority, your inferiority; how poor she was; how rich you were; how she lived in a slum without a cushion or a

bed or a rug or whatever it might be, all her soul rested with that grievance sticking in it, her dismissal from school during the war—poor embittered unfortunate creature! For it was not her one hated but the idea of her,

which undoubtedly had gathered in to itself a great deal that was not Oiss

.ilman; had become one of those spectres Zith Zhich one battles in the night; one of those spectres Zho stand astride Xs and sXck Xp half oXr life- blood, dominators and tyrants; for no doXbt Zith another throZ of the dice, had the black been Xppermost and not the Zhite, she ZoXld haYe loYed

Oiss .ilman! BXt not in this Zorld. 1o.

It rasped her, thoXgh, to haYe stirring aboXt in her this brXtal monster! to hear tZigs cracking and feel hooYes planted doZn in the depths of that

leaf-encXmbered forest, the soXl; neYer to be content TXite, or TXite secXre, for at any moment the brXte ZoXld be stirring, this hatred, Zhich,

especially since her illness, had poZer to make her feel scraped, hXrt in her spine; gaYe her physical pain, and made all pleasXre in beaXty, in friendship, in being Zell, in being loYed and making her home delightfXl rock, TXiYer, and bend as if indeed there Zere a monster grXbbing at the roots, as if the Zhole panoply of content Zere nothing bXt self loYe! this hatred!

nonsense, nonsense! she cried to herself, pushing through the  
singing doors of Oldberry's the florists.

She advanced, light, tall, very upright, to be greeted at once by  
button-faced Miss Pym, whose hands were always bright red, as if  
they had been  
stood in cold water with the flowers.

There were flowers: delphiniums, sweet peas, bunches of lilac; and  
carnations, masses of carnations. There were roses; there were  
irises. Ah yes—so she breathed in the earthy garden sweet smell as  
she stood talking to Miss Pym who offered her help, and thought her  
kind, for kind she had been years ago; very kind, but she looked  
older, this year, turning her head from side to side among the  
irises and roses and nodding gifts of lilac with her eyes half closed,  
sniffing in, after the street uproar, the delicious  
scent, the exquisite coolness. And then, opening her eyes, how  
fresh like frilled linen clean from a laundry laid in silver trays the  
roses looked; and dark and prim the red carnations, holding their

heads Xp; and all the sZeet peas spreading in their boZIs, tinged  
Yiolet, snoZ Zhite, pale—as if it

Zere the eYening and girls in mXslin frocks came oXt to pick sZeet  
peas and roses after the sXperb sXmmer's day, Zith its almost  
blXe-black sky, its delphiniXms, its carnations, its arXm lilies Zas  
oYer; and it Zas the moment betZeen si[ and seYen Zhen eYery  
floZer—roses, carnations, irises, lilac—gloZs; Zhite, Yiolet, red,  
deep orange; eYery floZer seems to

bXrn by itself, softly, pXrely in the misty beds; and hoZ she loYed  
the grey- Zhite moths spinning in and oXt, oYer the cherry pie,  
oYer the eYening primroses!

And as she began to go Zith Oiss Pym from jar to jar, choosing,  
nonsense, nonsense, she said to herself, more and more gently, as  
if this beaXty, this scent, this coloXr, and Oiss Pym liking her,  
trXsting her, Zere a ZaYe Zhich she let floZ oYer her and sXrmoXnt  
that hatred, that monster, sXrmoXnt it all; and it lifted her Xp and  
Xp Zhen—oh! a pistol shot in the street oXtside!

"Dear, those motor cars," said Oiss Pym, going to the ZindoZ to look, and coming back and smiling apologetically Zith her hands fXll of sZeet peas, as if those motor cars, those tyres of motor cars, Zere all her faXlt.

## CHAPTER II

The violent explosion which made Mrs. Dallozay jump and Miss Pym go to the window and apologise came from a motor car which had drawn to the side of the pavement precisely opposite Oxberry's shop window. Passers-by, of course, stopped and stared, had just time to see a face of the very greatest importance against the doyle-grey upholstery, before a male hand drew the blind and there was nothing to be seen except a stare of doyle grey.

Yet moments were at once in circulation from the middle of Bond Street to

2[ford Street on one side, to Atkinson's scent shop on the other, passing invisibly, indubly, like a cloud, swift, Yeil-like upon hills, falling indeed with something of a cloud's sudden sobriety and stillness upon faces which a second before had been utterly disorderly. But no mystery had brushed them with her ring; they had heard the voice of authority; the spirit of religion was abroad with her eyes bandaged tight and her lips gaping wide. But nobody

knE Zhose face had been seen. :as it the Prince of :ales's, the  
4Xeen's, the Prime 0inister's? :hose face Zas it? 1obody knE.

Edgar -. :atkiss, Zith his roll of lead piping roXnd his arm, said  
aXdibly, hXmoroXsly of coXrse: "The Proime 0inister's kyar."

6eptimXs :arren 6mith, Zho foXnd himself Xnable to pass, heard  
him.

6eptimXs :arren 6mith, aged aboXt thirty, pale-faced, beak-nosed,  
Zearing broZn shoes and a shabby oYercoat, Zith ha]el eyes Zhich  
had that look of apprehension in them Zhich makes complete  
strangers apprehensiYe too. The Zorld has raised its Zhip; Zhere  
Zill it descend?

EYerything had come to a standstill. The throb of the motor  
engines soXnded like a pXlse irregXlarly drXmming throXgh an



entire body. The sXn became e[traordinarily hot becaXse the motor car had stopped oXtside

OxIberry's shop ZindoZ; old ladies on the tops of omnibXses spread their black parasols; here a green, here a red parasol opened Zith a little pop.

Ors. DalloZay, coming to the ZindoZ Zith her arms fXll of sZeet peas, looked oXt Zith her little pink face pXrsed in enTXiry. EYery one looked at the motor car. 6eptimXs looked. Boys on bicycles sprang off. Traffic accXmXlated. And there the motor car stood, Zith draZn blinds, and Xpon them a cXrioXs pattern like a tree, 6eptimXs thoXght, and this gradXal draZing together of eYerything to one centre before his eyes, as if some horror had come almost to the sXrface and Zas aboXt to bXrst into flames, terrified him. The Zorld ZaYered and TXiYered and threatened to bXrst into flames. It is I Zho am blocking the Zay, he thoXght. :as he not being looked at and pointed at; Zas he not Zeighted there, rooted to the paYement, for a pXrpose? BXt for Zhat pXrpose?

"/et Xs go on, 6eptimXs," said his Zife, a little Zoman, Zith large eyes in a salloZ pointed face; an Italian girl.

But Xiaojia herself could not help looking at the motor car and the tree pattern on the blinds. Was it the Xeen in there—the Xeen going shopping?

The chauffeur, who had been opening something, turning something, shutting something, got on to the box.

"Come on," said Xiaojia.

But her husband, for they had been married for five years now, jumped, started, and said, "All right!" angrily, as if she had interrupted him.

People must notice; people must see. People, she thought, looking at the crowd staring at the motor car; the English people, with their children and their horses and their clothes, which she admired in a way; but they were "people" now, because Septimus had said, "I

"I'll kill myself"; an awful thing to say. Suppose they had heard him? He looked at the crowd. Help, help! she wanted to cry out to the others' boys and women. Help! Only last autumn she and Septimus had stood on the Embankment wrapped in the same cloak and, Septimus reading a paper instead of talking, she had snatched it from him and laughed in the old man's face who saved them! But fate conceals. He must take him away into some park.

"I'll cross," she said.

He had a right to his arm, though it was his feeling. He would give her, who was so simple, so impulsive, only twenty-four, his friends in England, who had left Italy for his sake, a piece of bone.

The motor car with its blinds drawn and an air of inscrutable reserve proceeded towards Piccadilly, still gazed at, still reflecting the faces on both sides of the street with the same dark breath of generation whether for

4Xeen, Prince, or Prime Minister nobody knew. The face itself had been seen only once by three people for a few seconds. Even the secret was not in dispute. But there could be no doubt that greatness was seated within; greatness was passing, hidden, down Bond Street, removed only by a hand's-breadth from ordinary people who might not, for the first and last time, be within speaking distance of the majesty of England, of the emblem symbol of the state which will be known to centuries, sifting the ruins of time, when London is a grass-grown path and all those

hurrying along the pavement this Wednesday morning are but bones with a few wedding rings mixed up in their dust and the gold stoppings of innumerable decayed teeth. The face in the motor car will then be known.

It is probably the 4Xeen, thought Mrs. Dallozay, coming out of Oxberry's with her flowers; the 4Xeen. And for a second she wore a look of extreme dignity standing by the flower shop in the sunlight while the car passed at

a foot's pace, with its blinds drawn. The 4Xeen going to some hospital; the

4Xeen opening some bazaar, thought Clarissa.

The carriage was terrific for the time of day. /ords, Ascot, HXrtingham, Zhat was it? she Zondered, for the street was blocked. The British middle classes sitting sideZays on the tops of omnibXses Zith parcels and Xmbrellas, yes, eYen fXrs on a day like this, Zere, she thoXght, more ridicXloXs, more Xnlike anything there has eYer been than one coXld conceiYe; and the 4Xeen herself held Xp; the 4Xeen herself Xnable to pass. Clarissa was sXsended on one side of Brook 6treet; 6ir -ohn BXckhXrst, the old -Xdge on the other, Zith the car betZeen them (6ir -ohn had laid doZn the laZ for years and liked a Zell-dressed Zoman) Zhen the chaXffeXr, leaning eYer so slightly, said or shoZed something to the policeman, Zho salXted and raised his arm and jerked his head and moYed

the omnibXs to the side and the car passed throXgh. 6loZly and Yery silently it took its Zay.

Clarissa gXessed; Clarissa kneZ of coXrse; she had seen something Zhite, magical, circXlar, in the footman's hand, a disc inscribed Zith a name,— the 4Xeen's, the Prince of :ales's, the Prime Oinister's?—Zhich, by force of its oZn lXstre, bXrnt its Zay throXgh (Clarissa saZ the car diminishing, disappearing), to bla]e among candelabras, glittering stars, breasts stiff Zith oak leaYes, HXgh

:hitbread and all his colleagXes, the gentlemen of England, that night in BXckingham Palace. And Clarissa, too, gaYe a party.

6he stiffened a little; so she ZoXld stand at the top of her stairs.

The car had gone, bXt it had left a slight ripple Zhich floZed throXgh gloYe shops and hat shops and tailors' shops on both sides of Bond 6treet. For thirty seconds all heads Zere inclined the same Zay—to the ZindoZ. Choosing a pair of gloYes—shoXld they be to the elboZ or aboYe it, lemon or pale grey?—ladies stopped; Zhen the sentence Zas finished something had happened.

6omething so trifling in single instances that no mathematical instrXment, thoXgh capable of transmitting shocks in China, coXld register the Yibration; yet in its fXlness rather formidable and in its common appeal emotional; for in all the hat shops and tailors' shops strangers looked at each other and thoXght of the dead; of the flag; of Empire. In a pXblic hoXse in a back street a Colonial insXlted the HoXse of

:indsor Zhich led to Zords, broken beer glasses, and a general shindy, Zhich echoed strangely across the Zay in the ears of girls bXying Zhite Xnderlinen threaded Zith pXre Zhite ribbon for their Zeddings. For the sXrface agitation of the passing car as it sXnk gra]ed something Yery profoXnd.

Gliding across Piccadilly, the car turned down the street. Tall men, men of robust physique, well-dressed men with their tail-coats and their white slips and their hair raked back, for reasons difficult to discriminate, were standing in the bow of Brooks's with their hands behind the tails of their coats, looking on, perceived instinctively that greatness was passing, and the pale light of the immortal presence fell upon them as it had fallen upon Clarissa Dalloze. At once they stood

eyes straighter, and removed their hands, and seemed ready to attend their

obey, if need be, to the cannon's mouth, as their ancestors had done before them. The white boxes and the little tables in the background covered with copies of the Tatler and syphons of soda water seemed to approve; seemed to indicate the flourishing corn and the manor houses of England; and to return the frail hum of the motor wheels as the walls of a whispering gallery returned a single voice expanded and made sonorous by

the might of a whole cathedral. Elizabeth Pratt with her fingers on the pavement kissed the dear boy Zell (it was the Prince of Wales for certain) and would have tossed the price of a pot of beer—a bunch of roses—into

the street of sheer light-heartedness and contempt of poverty had she not seen the constable's eye upon her,

discoXraging an old IrishZoman's loyalty. The sentries at 6t. -  
ames's salXted; 4Xeen Ale[andra's policeman approYed.

A small croZd meanZhile had gathered at the gates of  
BXckingham Palace. /istlessly, yet confidently, poor people all of  
them, they Zaited; looked at the Palace itself Zith the flag flying;  
at Victoria, billoZing on her moXnd, admired her shelYes of  
rXnning Zater, her geraniXms; singled oXt from the motor cars in  
the Oall first this one, then that; bestoZed emotion, Yainly, Xpon  
commoners oXt for a driYe; recalled their tribXte to keep it  
Xnspent Zhile this car passed and that; and all the time let rXmoXr  
accXmXlate in their Yeins and thrill the nerYes in their thighs at the  
thoXght of 5oyalty looking at them; the 4Xeen boZing; the Prince  
salXting; at the thoXght of the heaYenly life diYinely bestoZed  
Xpon .ings; of the

eTXerries and deep cXrtsies; of the 4Xeen's old doll's hoXse; of  
Princess

Oary married to an Englishman, and the Prince—ah! the Prince!  
Zho took ZonderfXlly, they said, after old .ing EdZard, bXt Zas  
eYer so mXch slimmer. The Prince liYed at 6t. -ames's; bXt he  
might come along in the morning to Yisit his mother.



60 Sarah Bletchley said with her baby in her arms, tipping her foot  
up and down as though she were by her own fender in Pimlico, but  
keeping her eyes on the ball, while Emily Coates ranged over the  
palace windows and thought of the household maids, the innumerable  
housemaids, the bedrooms,

the innumerable bedrooms. -joined by an elderly gentleman with an  
Aberdeen terrier, by men with occupation, the crowd increased.  
/ittle

Mr. Boleyn, who had rooms in the Albany and was sealed with a  
over

the deeper sources of life but could be unsealed suddenly,  
inappropriately, sentimentally, by this sort of thing—poor Zomen  
waiting to see the children go past—poor Zomen, nice little children,  
orphans, widows, the war-torn—acted—actually had tears in his eyes. A  
breeze flapping over so warmly down the ball through the thin  
trees, past the bronze heroes, lifted some flag flying in the British  
breast of Mr. Boleyn and he raised his hat as the car turned into  
the ball and held it high as the car approached; and let the poor  
mothers of Pimlico press close to him, and stood very upright. The  
car came on.

Suddenly Mrs. Coates looked up into the sky. The sound of an aeroplane boomed ominously into the ears of the crowd. There it was coming over the trees, letting out white smoke from behind, which whirled and whizzed, actually writing something! making letters in the sky! Every one looked up.

Dropping dead down the aeroplane soared straight up, whirled in a loop, raced, sank, rose, and whatever it did, wherever it went, out flitted behind it a thick whiffled bar of white smoke which whirled and whizzed upon the sky in letters. But what letters? A C was it? an E, then an /? Only for a moment did they lie still; then they moved and melted and were whiffled out up in the sky, and the aeroplane shot further away and again, in a fresh space of sky, began writing a ., an E, a Y perhaps?

"Glad!" said Mrs. Coates in a strained, awe-stricken voice, gazing straight

up, and her baby, lying stiff and white in her arms, gazed straight up.

"reemo," mXrmXred Ors. Bletchley, like a sleep-Zalker. :ith his hat held oXt perfectly still in his hand, Or. BoZley ga]ed straight Xp. All doZn the Oall people Zere standing and looking Xp into the sky. As they looked the Zhole Zorld became perfectly silent, and a flight of gXlls crossed the sky, first one gXll leading, then another, and in this e[traordinary silence and peace, in this pallor, in this pXrity, bells strXck eleYen times, the soXnd fading Xp there among the gXlls.

The aeroplane tXrned and raced and sZoooped e[actly Zhere it liked, sZiftly, freely, like a skater—

"That's an E," said Ors. Bletchley—or a dancer—

"It's toffee," mXrmXred Or. BoZley—(and the car Zent in at the gates and nobody looked at it), and shXtting off the smoke, aZay and aZay it rXshed, and the smoke faded and assembled itself roXnd the broad Zhite shapes of the cloXds.

It had gone; it was behind the clouds. There was no sound. The clouds to which the letters E, G, or / had attached themselves moved freely, as if destined to cross from West to East on a mission of the greatest importance which would never be revealed, and yet certainly so it was—a mission of the greatest importance. Then suddenly, as a train comes out of a tunnel, the aeroplane rushed out of the clouds again, the sound boring into the ears of all people in the Mall, in the Green Park, in Piccadilly, in Regent Street, in Regent's Park, and the bar of smoke cleared behind and it dropped down, and it soared up and wrote one letter after another—beyond that word was it writing?

Lucy Arran Smith, sitting by her husband's side on a seat in Regent's

Park in the Broad Walk, looked up.

"Look, look, beautiful!" she cried. For Dr. Holmes had told her to make her husband (who had nothing whatever seriously the matter with him beyond that of sorts) take an interest in things outside himself.

So, thought Septimus, looking up, they are signalling to me. I am indeed in actual Zords; that is, he could not read the language yet; but it was plain enough, this beauty, this exquisite beauty, and tears filled his eyes as he looked at the smoke Zords languishing and melting in the sky and bestowing upon him in their ineffable charity and laughing goodness one shape after another of unimaginable beauty and signalling their intention to provide him, for nothing, for ever, for looking merely, with beauty, more beauty! Tears ran down his cheeks.

It was toffee; they were advertising toffee, a nursemaid told Eija. Together they began to spell t ... o ... f ...

"... 5 ..." said the nursemaid, and Septimus heard her say "ay Arr" close to his ear, deeply, softly, like a mellow organ, but with a roughness in her voice like a grasshopper's, which rasped his spine deliciously and sent ringing up into his brain a yes of sound which, concussing, broke. A marvelous discovery indeed—that the human voice in certain

atmospheric conditions (for one must be scientific, above all scientific) can tickle trees into life! Happily Eija put her hand with a tremendous weight on his knee so that he was weighted down, transfixed, or the excitement of the elm trees rising and

falling, rising and falling Zith all their leaYes alight and the coloXr thinning and thickening from blXe to the green of a holloZ ZaYe, like plXmes on horses' heads, feathers on ladies', so proXdly they rose and fell, so sXperbly, ZoXld haYe sent him mad. BXt he ZoXld not go mad. He ZoXld shXt his eyes; he ZoXld see no more.

BXt they beckoned; leaYes Zere aliYe; trees Zere aliYe. And the leaYes being connected by millions of fibres Zith his oZn body, there on the seat, fanned it Xp and doZn; Zhen the branch stretched he, too, made that statement. The sparroZs flXttering, rising, and falling in jagged foXntains Zere part of the pattern; the Zhite and blXe, barred Zith black branches.

6oXnds made harmonies Zith premeditation; the spaces betZeen them Zere as significant as the soXnds. A child cried. 5ightly far aZay a horn soXnded. All taken together meant the birth of a neZ religion—

"6eptimXs!" said 5e]ia. He started Yiolently. People mXst notice. "I am going to Zalk to the foXntain and back," she said.

For she could stand it no longer. Dr. Holmes might say there was nothing the matter. Far rather would she that he were dead! She could not sit beside him when he stared so and did not see her and made everything terrible;

sky and tree, children playing, dragging carts, blowing whistles, falling down; all were terrible. And he would not kill himself; and she could tell no one. "Septimus has been working too hard"—that was all she could say to her own mother. To love makes one solitary, she thought. She could tell nobody, not even Septimus now, and looking back, she saw him sitting in his shabby overcoat alone, on the seat, hunched up, staring. And it was cowardly for a man to say he would kill himself, but Septimus had thought; he was brave; he was not Septimus now. She put on her lace collar. She put on her new hat and he never noticed; and he was happy with her.

Nothing could make her happy with him! Nothing! He was selfish. So men are. For he was not ill. Dr. Holmes said there was nothing the matter with him. She spread her hand before her. Look! Her wedding ring slipped

—she had grown so thin. It was she who suffered—but she had nobody to tell.

Far Zas Italy and the Zhite hoXses and the room Zhere her sisters sat making hats, and the streets croZded eYery eYening Zith people Zalking, laXghing oXt loXd, not half aliYe like people here, hXddled Xp in Bath chairs, looking at a feZ Xgly floZers stXck in pots!

"For yoX shoXld see the Oilan gardens," she said aloXd. BXt to Zhom? There Zas nobody. Her Zords faded. 6o a rocket fades. Its sparks, haYing

gra]ed their Zay into the night, sXrrender to it, dark descends, poXrs oYer the oXtlines of hoXses and toZers; bleak hillsides soften and fall in. BXt thoXgh they are gone, the night is fXll of them; robbed of coloXr, blank of ZindoZs, they e[ist more ponderoXsly, giYe oXt Zhat the frank daylight fails to transmit—the troXble and sXspense of things conglomerated there in the darkness; hXddled together in the darkness; reft of the relief Zhich daZn brings Zhen, Zashing the Zalls Zhite and grey, spotting each ZindoZ-pane, lifting the mist from the fields, shoZing the red-broZn coZs peacefXlly gra]ing, all is once more decked oXt to the eye; e[ists again. I am alone; I am alone! she cried, by the foXntain in 5egent's Park (staring

at the Indian and his cross), as perhaps at midnight, Zhen all boXndaries are lost, the coXntry reYerts to its ancient shape, as the 5omans saZ it, lying cloXdy, Zhen they landed, and the hills



had no names and riYers ZoXnd they kneZ not Zhere—sXch Zas her darkness; Zhen sXddenly, as if a shelf Zere shot forth and she stood on it, she said hoZ she Zas his Zife, married years ago in Oilan, his Zife, and ZoXld neYer, neYer tell that he Zas mad! TXrning, the shelf fell; doZn, doZn she dropped. For he Zas gone, she thoXght—gone, as he threatened, to kill himself—to throZ himself Xnder a cart! BXt no; there he Zas; still sitting alone on the seat, in his shabby oYercoat, his legs crossed, staring, talking aloXd.

Oen mXst not cXt doZn trees. There is a God. (He noted sXch reYelations on the backs of enYelopes.) Change the Zorld. 1o one kills from hatred.

Oake it knoZn (he Zrote it doZn). He Zaited. He listened. A sparroZ perched on the railing opposite chirped 6eptimXs, 6eptimXs, foXr or fiYe times oYer and Zent on, draZing its notes oXt, to sing freshly and piercingly in Greek Zords hoZ there is no crime and, joined by another sparroZ, they sang in Yoices prolonged and piercing in Greek Zords, from trees in the meadoZ of life beyond a riYer Zhere the dead Zalk, hoZ there is no death.

There was his hand; there the dead. White things were assembling behind the railings opposite. But he dared not look. Eyes were behind the railings!

"What are you saying?" said Selma suddenly, sitting down by him. Interrupted again! She was always interrupting.

Away from people—they must get away from people, he said (jumping up), right away over there, where there were chairs beneath a tree and the long slope of the park dipped like a length of green stuff with a ceiling cloth of blue and pink smoke high above, and there was a rampart of far irregular houses half in smoke, the traffic hummed in a circle, and on the right, dark-colored animals stretched long necks over the Zoo palings, barking, howling. There they sat down under a tree.

"Look," she implored him, pointing at a little troop of boys carrying cricket stumps, and one shuffled, spun round on his heel and shuffled, as if he were acting a clown at the music hall.

"/ook," she implored him, for Dr. Holmes had told her to make him notice real things, go to a mXsic hall, play cricket—that Zas the Yery game, Dr. Holmes said, a nice oXt-of-door game, the Yery game for her hXsband.

"/ook," she repeated.

/ook the Xnseen bade him, the Yoice Zhich noZ commXnicated Zith him Zho Zas the greatest of mankind, 6eptimXs, lately taken from life to death, the /ord Zho had come to reneZ society, Zho lay like a coYerlet, a snoZ blanket smitten only by the sXn, for eYer XnZasted, sXffering for

eYer, the scapegoat, the eternal sXfferer, bXt he did not Zant it, he moaned,

pXtting from him Zith a ZaYe of his hand that eternal sXffering, that eternal loneliness.

"/ook," she repeated, for he mXst not talk aloXd to himself oXt of doors. "2h look," she implored him. BXt Zhat Zas there to look at? A feZ sheep.

That Zas all.

The Zay to 5egent's Park TXbe station—coXld they tell her the Zay to

5egent's Park TXbe station—Oaisie -ohnson Zanted to knoZ. 6he Zas only Xp from EdinbXrgh tZo days ago.

"1ot this Zay—oYer there!" 5e]ia e[claimed, ZaYing her aside, lest she shoXld see 6eptimXs.

Both seemed TXeer, Oaisie -ohnson thoXght. EYerything seemed Yery

TXeer. In /ondon for the first time, come to take Xp a post at her Xncle's in

/eadenhall 6treet, and noZ Zalking throXgh 5egent's Park in the morning, this coXple on the chairs gaYe her TXite a tXrn; the yoXng Zoman seeming foreign, the man looking TXeer; so that shoXld she be Yery old she ZoXld still remember and make it jangle again among her memories hoZ she had Zalked throXgh 5egent's Park on a fine sXmmer's morning fifty years ago. For she Zas only nineteen and had got her Zay at last, to come to /ondon;

and noZ hoZ TXeer it Zas, this coXple she had asked the Zay of, and the girl started and jerked her hand, and the man—he seemed aZfXlly odd; TXarrelling, perhaps; parting for eYer, perhaps; something Zas Xp, she kneZ; and noZ all these people (for she retXrned to the Broad :alk), the stone basins, the prim floZers, the old men and Zomen, inYalids most of them in Bath chairs—all seemed, after EdinbXrgh, so TXeer. And Oaisie

-ohnson, as she joined that gently trXdging, YagXely ga]ing, bree]e-kissed company—sTXirrels perching and preening, sparroZ foXntains flXttering for crXmbs, dogs bXsy Zith the railings, bXsy Zith each other, Zhile the soft Zarm air Zashed oYer them and lent to the fi[ed XnsXrprised ga]e

Zith Zhich they receiYed life something Zhimsical and mollified—Oaisie

-ohnson positiYely felt she mXst cry Zh! (for that yoXng man on the seat had giYen her TXite a tXrn. 6omething Zas Xp, she kneZ.)

Horror! horror! she Zanted to cry. (6he had left her people; they had

Zarned her Zhat ZoXld happen.)

:hy hadn't she stayed at home? she cried, tZisting the knob of the iron railing.

That girl, thoXght Ors. Dempster (Zho saYed crXsts for the sTXirrels and often ate her IXnch in 5egent's Park), don't knoZ a thing yet; and really it seemed to her better to be a little stoXt, a little slack, a little moderate in one's e[pectations. Percy drank. :ell, better to haYe a son, thoXght Ors. Dempster. 6he had had a hard time of it, and coXldn't help smiling at a girl like that. YoX'll get married, for yoX're pretty enoXgh, thoXght Ors. Dempster. Get married, she thoXght, and then yoX'll knoZ. 2h, the cooks, and so on. EYery man has his Zays. BXt Zhether I'd haYe chosen TXite like that if I coXld haYe knoZn, thoXght Ors. Dempster, and coXld not help Zishing to Zhisper a Zord to Oaisie -ohnson; to feel on the creased poXch of her Zorn old face the kiss of pity. For it's been a hard life, thoXght Ors. Dempster. :hat hadn't she giYen to it? 5oses; figXre; her feet too. (6he dreZ the knobbed IXmps beneath her skirt.)

5oses, she thoXght sardonically. All trash, m'dear. For really, Zhat Zith eating, drinking, and mating, the bad days and good, life had been no mere matter of roses, and Zhat Zas more, let me tell yoX,

Carrie Dempster had no wish to change her lot with any woman's in  
English town! But, she implored, pity. Pity, for the loss of roses. Pity  
she asked of Oaisie Johnson, standing by the hyacinth beds.

Ah, but that aeroplane! Hadn't Mrs. Dempster always longed to see  
foreign parts? She had a nephew, a missionary. It soared and shot.  
She always went on the sea at Margate, not out of sight of land, but  
she had no patience with women who were afraid of water. It swept  
and fell. Her stomach was in her mouth. Up again. There's a fine  
young fellow aboard of it, Mrs. Dempster gazed, and away and  
away it went, fast and fading, away and away the aeroplane shot;  
soaring over Greenwich and all the masts; over the little island of  
grey churches, St. Paul's and the rest till, on either side of

London, fields spread out and dark broad woods where  
adventurous thrushes hopping boldly, glancing quickly, snatched  
the snail and tapped him on a stone, once, twice, thrice.

Away and away the aeroplane shot, till it was nothing but a bright  
spark; an aspiration; a concentration; a symbol (so it seemed to  
Mr. Bentley, vigorously rolling his strip of turf at Greenwich) of  
man's soul; of his determination, thought Mr. Bentley, sleeping  
round the cedar tree, to get outside his body, beyond his house,

by means of thought, Einstein, speculation, mathematics, the  
Oendelian theory—aZay the aeroplane shot.

Then, Zhile a seedy-looking nondescript man carrying a leather  
bag stood on the steps of St. Paul's Cathedral, and hesitated, for  
Zithin Zaz Zhat balm, how great a Welcome, how many tombs Zith  
banners ZaYing over them, tokens of Victories not over armies,  
but over, he thought, that plaggy spirit of truth seeking which  
leaves me at present Zithout a situation, and more than that, the  
cathedral offers company, he thought, invites you to membership  
of a society; great men belong to it; martyrs have died for it; Why  
not enter in, he thought, put this leather bag stuffed Zith  
pamphlets before an altar, a cross, the symbol of something which  
has soared beyond seeking and testing and knocking of Zords  
together and has become all spirit, disembodied, ghostly—Why not  
enter in? he thought and Zhile he hesitated over the aeroplane  
over /Xdgate Circles.

It was strange; it was still. Not a sound was to be heard above the  
traffic.



8ngXided it seemed; sped of its oZn free Zill. And noZ, cXrYing Xp  
and Xp, straight Xp, like something moXnting in ecstasy, in pXre  
delight, oXt from behind poXred Zhite smoke looping, Zriting a T,  
an 2, an F.

## CHAPTER III

"What are they looking at?" said Clarissa DalloZay to the maid who opened her door.

The hall of the house was cool as a Yacht. Mrs. DalloZay raised her hand to her eyes, and, as the maid shut the door to, and she heard the rustle of

her skirts, she felt like a woman who has left the world and feels fold round her the familiar veils and the response to old devotions. The cook whistled in the kitchen. She heard the click of the typewriter. It was her life, and, bending her head over the hall table, she bowed beneath the influence, felt blessed and purified, saying to herself, as she took the pad with the telephone message on it, how moments like this are buds on the tree of life, flowers of darkness they are, she thought (as if some lovely

rose had blossomed for her eyes only); not for a moment did she believe in God; but all the more, she thought, taking up the pad, must one repay in daily life to servants, yes, to dogs and canaries, above all to Richard her husband, who was the foundation of it—of the gay sounds, of the green lights, of the cook's whistling, for Mrs. Walker was Irish and whistled all day long—one must pay back

from this secret deposit of exquisite moments, she thought, lifting the pad, while Percy stood by her, trying to explain how

"Or. DalloZay, ma'am"—

Clarissa read on the telephone pad, "Lady BrXton wishes to know if Or. DalloZay will IXnch with her to-day."

"Or. DalloZay, ma'am, told me to tell you he would be IXnching with you." "Dear!" said Clarissa, and Percy shared as she meant her to her

disappointment (but not the pang); felt the concord between them; took the hint; thought how the gentry love; gilded her own future with calm; and, taking Mrs. DalloZay's parasol, handled it like a sacred weapon which a Goddess, having acquitted herself honorably in the field of battle, sheds, and placed it in the umbrella stand.

"Fear no more," said Clarissa. Fear no more the heat o' the sun; for the shock of Lady Brontë asking Richard to touch her made the moment in which she had stood shiver, as a plant on the river-bed feels the shock of a passing oar and shivers: so she rocked: so she shivered.

Delicent Brontë, whose touch parties were said to be extraordinarily amusing, had not asked her. To Edgar jealousy could separate her from

Richard. But she feared time itself, and read on Lady Brontë's face, as if it had been a dial cut in impassive stone, the dwindling of life; how year by year her share was sliced; how little the margin that remained was capable any longer of stretching, of absorbing, as in the youthful years, the

colors, salts, tones of existence, so that she filled the room she entered, and felt often as she stood hesitating one moment on the threshold of her dressing-room, an exquisite suspense, such as might stay a day before plunging while the sea darkens and brightens beneath him, and the waves which threaten to break, but only gently split their surface, roll and conceal and encrust as they just turn over the Zeed's with pearl.

She put the pad on the hall table. She began to go slowly upstairs, with her hand on the banisters, as if she had left a party, there no longer this friend

no longer that had flashed back her face, her voice; had shut the door and gone out and stood alone, a single figure against the appalling night, or rather, to be accurate, against the stare of this matter-of-fact -Xne morning; soft with the glow of rose petals for some, she knew, and felt it, as she passed by the open staircase window which let in blinds flapping, dogs barking, let in, she thought, feeling herself suddenly shrieked, aged, breathless, the grinding, blowing, flooring of the day, out of doors, out of the window, out of her body and brain which no longer failed, since /ady BrXton,

Those lunch parties she said to be extraordinarily amusing, had not asked her.

Like a nun withdrawing, or a child exploring a tower, she went upstairs, passed at the window, came to the bathroom. There was the green linoleum and a tap dripping. There was an emptiness about the heart of

life; an attic room. Women must put off their rich apparel. At midday they must disrobe. She pierced the pin cushion and laid her

feathered yellow hat on the bed. The sheets were clean, tight stretched in a broad white band from side to side. Narrow and narrow would her bed be. The candle was half burnt down and she had read deep in Baron Oarbot's Memoirs.

She had read late at night of the retreat from Moscow. For the House sat so long that Richard insisted, after her illness, that she must sleep undisturbed. And really she preferred to read of the retreat from Moscow.

He knew it. So the room was an attic; the bed narrow; and lying there reading, for she slept badly, she could not dispel a virginity preserved through childbirth which clung to her like a sheet.

Early in girlhood, suddenly there came a moment—for example on the river beneath the Woods at Cliveden—when, through some contraction of this cold spirit, she had failed him. And then at Constantinople, and again and again. She could see that she lacked. It was not beauty; it was not mind. It was something central which permeated; something warm which broke up surfaces and rippled the cold contact of man and woman, or of women together. For that she could dimly perceive. She resented it, had a scruple picked up Heaven knows where, or, as she felt, sent by fate (who is invariably wise); yet she could not resist sometimes yielding to the charm of a woman, not a girl, of a woman confessing, as to her they often did, some scrape, some folly. And whether it was pity, or their beauty, or that she was older,

or some accident—like a faint scent, or a Violin net door (so strange is the power of sounds at certain moments), she did undoubtedly then feel what men felt. Only for a moment; but it was enough. It was a sudden revelation, a tinge like a blush which one tried to check and then, as it spread, one yielded to its expansion, and rushed to the farthest verge and there withdrew and felt the world come closer, so laden with some astonishing significance, some pressure of rapture, which split its thin skin and gashed and poured with an extraordinary alleviation over the cracks and sores! Then, for that moment, she had seen an illumination; a match burning in a cross; an inner meaning almost expressed. But the close withered; the hard softened. It was over—the moment. Against such moments (with women too) there contrasted (as she laid her hat down) the bed and Baron Oarbot and the candle half-burnt. /ying awake, the floor creaked; the lit house was suddenly darkened, and if she raised her head she could just hear the click of the handle released as gently as possible by

Richard, who slipped upstairs in his socks and then, as often as not, dropped his hot-water bottle and sores! How she laughed!

But this exhibition of loyalty (she thought, putting her coat away), this falling in love with Zomen. Take Emily; her relation in the old days with

Emily. Had not that, after all, been love?

She sat on the floor—that was her first impression of Emily—she sat on the floor with her arms round her knees, smoking a cigarette. Where could it have been? The Mannings? The Inlochs? At some party (where, she could not be certain), for she had a distinct recollection of saying to

the man she was with, "Who is that?" And he had told her, and said that

Emily's parents did not get on (how that shocked her—that one's parents should quarrel!). But all that evening she could not take her eyes off Emily. It was an extraordinary beauty of the kind she most admired, dark, large-eyed, with that quality which, since she hadn't got it herself, she always envied—a sort of abandonment, as if she could say anything, do anything; a quality much commoner in foreigners than in Englishwomen. Emily always said she had French blood in her veins, an ancestor had been with

Marie Antoinette, had his head cut off, left a ruby ring. Perhaps that summer she came to stay at Boxton, talking in excitedly expectedly with a penny in her pocket, one night after dinner, and upsetting poor Aunt Helena to such an extent that she never



forgave her. There had been some TXarrel at home. She literally hadn't a penny that night when she came to them—had pawned a brooch to come down. She had rXshed off in a passion. They sat Xp till all hoXrs of the night talking. Gally it Zas Zho

made her feel, for the first time, hoZ sheltered the life at BoXrton Zas. She kneZ nothing aboXt se[—nothing aboXt social problems. She had once

seen an old man Zho had dropped dead in a field—she had seen coZs jXst after their calYes Zere born. BXt AXnt Helena neYer liked discXssion of anything (Zhen Gally gaYe her :illiam Oorris, it had to be Zrapped in broZn paper). There they sat, hoXr after hoXr, talking in her bedroom at

the top of the hoXse, talking aboXt life, hoZ they Zere to reform the Zorld. They meant to foXnd a society to abolish priYate property, and actXally had a letter Zritten, thoXgh not sent oXt. The ideas Zere Gally's, of coXrse—bXt Yery soon she Zas jXst as e[cited—read Plato in bed before breakfast; read

Oorris; read Shelley by the hoXr.

Gally's poZer Zas ama]ing, her gift, her personality. There Zas her Zay Zith floZers, for instance. At BoXrton they alZays had stiff

little Yases all the Zay doZn the table. 6ally Zent oXt, picked hollyhocks, dahlias—all sorts of floZers that had neYer been seen together—cXt their heads off, and made them sZim on the top of Zater in boZls. The effect Zas e[traordinary—coming in to dinner in the sXnset. (2f coXrse AXnt Helena

thoXght it Zicked to treat floZers like that.) Then she forgot her sponge, and ran along the passage naked. That grim old hoXsemaid, Ellen Atkins, Zent aboXt grXmbling—"6Xppose any of the gentlemen had seen?" Indeed she did shock people. 6he Zas Xntidy, Papa said.

The strange thing, on looking back, Zas the pXrity, the integrity, of her feeling for 6ally. It Zas not like one's feeling for a man. It Zas completely disinterested, and besides, it had a TXality Zhich coXld only e[ist betZeen Zomen, betZeen Zomen jXst groZn Xp. It Zas protectiYe, on her side; sprang from a sense of being in leagXe together, a presentiment of something that Zas boXnd to part them (they spoke of marriage alZays as

a catastrophe), Zhich led to this chiYalry, this protectiYe feeling Zhich Zas mXch more on her side than 6ally's. For in those days she Zas completely reckless; did the most idiotic things oXt of braYado; bicycled roXnd the parapet on the terrace; smoked

cigars. AbsXrd, she Zas—Yery absXrd. BXt the charm Zas oYerpoZering, to her at least, so that she coXld remember standing in her bedroom at the top of the hoXse holding the hot-Zater can in her hands and saying aloXd, "6he is beneath this roof... . 6he is beneath this roof!"

lo, the Zords meant absolXtely nothing to her noZ. 6he coXld not eYen get an echo of her old emotion. BXt she coXld remember going cold Zith e[citement, and doing her hair in a kind of ecstasy (noZ the old feeling began to come back to her, as she took oXt her hairpins, laid them on the dressing-table, began to do her hair), Zith the rooks flaXnting Xp and doZn in the pink eYening light, and dressing, and going doZnstairs, and feeling as she crossed the hall "if it Zere noZ to die 'tZere noZ to be most happy." That Zas her feeling—2thello's feeling, and she felt it, she Zas conYinced, as strongly as 6hakespeare meant 2thello to feel it, all becaXse she Zas coming doZn to dinner in a Zhite frock to meet 6ally 6eton!

6he Zas Zearing pink gaXje—Zas that possible? 6he seemed, anyhoZ, all light, gloZing, like some bird or air ball that has floZn

in, attached itself for a moment to a bramble. But nothing is so strange when one is in love (and that was this except being in love?) as the complete indifference of other people. Aunt Helena just wandered off after dinner; Papa read the paper. Peter might have been there, and old Miss Cummings; -Joseph

Breitkopf certainly was, for he came every summer, poor old man, for weeks and weeks, and pretended to read German with her, but really played the piano and sang Brahms with any voice.

All this was only a background for Gally. She stood by the fireplace talking, in that beautiful voice which made everything she said sound like a caress, to Papa, who had begun to be attracted rather against his will (he never got over lending her one of his books and finding it soaked on the terrace), when suddenly she said, "What a shame to sit indoors!" and they all went out on to the terrace and talked up and down. Peter and

-Joseph Breitkopf went on about Wagner. She and Gally fell a little behind. Then came the most exquisite moment of her whole life passing a stone urn with flowers in it. Gally stopped; picked a flower; kissed her on the lips. The whole world might have turned upside down! The others disappeared; there she was alone with Gally. And she felt that she had been given a present, wrapped up,

and told jXst to keep it, not to look at it—a diamond, something infinitely precioXs, Zrapped Xp, Zhich, as they Zalked (Xp and doZn, Xp and doZn), she XncoYered, or the radiance bXrnt throXgh, the reYelation, the religioXs feeling!—Zhen old -oseph and Peter faced them:

"6tar-ga]ing?" said Peter.

It Zas like rXnning one's face against a granite Zall in the darkness! It Zas shocking; it Zas horrible!

1ot for herself. 6he felt only hoZ 6ally Zas being maXled already, maltreated; she felt his hostility; his jealoXsy; his determination to break into their companionship. All this she saZ as one sees a landscape in a flash of lightning—and 6ally (neYer had she admired her so mXch!) gallantly taking her Zay XnYanTXished. 6he laXghed. 6he made old -oseph tell her the names of the stars, Zhich he liked doing Yery serioXsly. 6he stood there: she listened. 6he heard the names of the stars.

"Oh this horror!" she said to herself, as if she had known all along that something would interrupt, would embitter her moment of happiness.

Yet, after all, how much she owed to him later. Always when she thought of him she thought of their quarrels for some reason—because she valued his good opinion so much, perhaps. He owed him words: "sentimental," "civilised"; they started every day of her life as if he grieved her. A book was sentimental; an attitude to life sentimental. "Sentimental," perhaps she was to be thinking of the past. What would he think, she wondered, when he came back?

That she had grown older? Would he say that, or would she see him thinking when he came back, that she had grown older? It was true. Since her illness she had turned almost white.

Laying her brooch on the table, she had a sudden spasm, as if, while she missed, the icy clasp had had the chance to fix in her. He was not old yet.

She had just broken into her fifty-second year. Months and months of it were still untraced. -None, -Nly, AXgXst! Each still remained almost whole, and, as if to catch the falling drop, Clarissa (crossing to the dressing-table) plunged into the very heart of the moment, transfixed it, there—the moment of this -None morning on which was the pressure of all the other mornings, seeing the glass, the dressing-table, and all the bottles afresh, collecting the whole of her at one point (as she looked into the glass), seeing the delicate pink face of the woman who was that very night to give a party; of Clarissa Dallozay; of herself.

How many million times she had seen her face, and always with the same imperceptible contraction! She pressed her lips when she looked in the glass. It was to give her face point. That was her self—pointed; dartlike; definite. That was her self when some effort, some call on her to be her self, drew the parts together, she alone knew how different, how incompatible and composed so for the world only into one centre, one diamond, one woman who sat in her dressing-room and made a meeting-point, a radiance no doubt in some distant lives, a refuge for the lonely to come to, perhaps; she had helped young people, who were grateful to her; had tried to be the same always, never showing a sign of all the other sides of

her—faXlts, jealoXsies, Yanities, sXspicions, like this of /ady  
BrXton not asking her to lXnch; Zhich, she thoXght (combing her  
hair finally), is Xtterly base! 1oZ, Zhere Zas her dress?

Her eYening dresses hXng in the cXpboard. Clarissa, plXnging her  
hand into the softness, gently detached the green dress and  
carried it to the ZindoZ.

6he had torn it. 6ome one had trod on the skirt. 6he had felt it giYe  
at the Embassy party at the top among the folds. By artificial light  
the green shone, bXt lost its coloXr noZ in the sXn. 6he ZoXld  
mend it. Her maids had too mXch to do. 6he ZoXld Zear it to-night.  
6he ZoXld take her silks, her scissors, her—Zhat Zas it?—her  
thimble, of coXrse, doZn into the draZing-room, for she mXst also  
Zrite, and see that things generally Zere more or less in order.

6trange, she thoXght, paXsing on the landing, and assembling that  
diamond shape, that single person, strange hoZ a mistress knoZs  
the Yery moment, the Yery temper of her hoXse! Faint soXnds rose  
in spirals Xp the Zell of

the stairs; the sZish of a mop; tapping; knocking; a loXdness Zhen  
the front door opened; a Yoice repeating a message in the  
basement; the chink of silYer on a tray; clean silYer for the party.  
All Zas for the party.



(And /Xcy, coming into the draZing-room Zith her tray held oXt, pXt the giant candlesticks on the mantelpiece, the silYer casket in the middle, tXrned the crystal dolphin toZards the clock. They ZoXld come; they

ZoXld stand; they ZoXld talk in the mincing tones Zhich she coXld imitate, ladies and gentlemen. 2f all, her mistress Zas loYeliest—mistress of

silYer, of linen, of china, for the sXn, the silYer, doors off their hinges,

5Xmpelmayer's men, gaYe her a sense, as she laid the paper-knife on the inlaid table, of something achieYed. Behold! Behold! she said, speaking to her old friends in the baker's shop, Zhere she had first seen serYice at Caterham, prying into the glass. 6he Zas /ady Angela, attending Princess

Oary, Zhen in came Ors. DalloZay.)

"2h /Xcy," she said, "the silYer does look nice!"

"And hoZ," she said, tXrning the crystal dolphin to stand straight, "hoZ did yoX enjoy the play last night?" "2h, they had to go before

the end!" she said. "They had to be back at ten!" she said. "So they don't know what happened," she said. "That does seem hard to say," she said (for her servants stayed later, if they asked her). "That does seem rather a shame," she said, taking the old bald-looking cushion in the middle of the sofa and putting it in Mr. Wood's arms, and giving her a little kiss, and crying:

"Take it away! Give it to Mrs. Walker with my compliments! Take it away!" she cried.

And Mr. Wood stopped at the drawing-room door, holding the cushion, and

said, very shyly, turning a little pink, "Couldn't she help to mend that dress?"

But, said Mrs. Dallovey, she had enough on her hands already, "I have quite enough of her own to do with that."

"BXt, thank yoX, /Xcy, oh, thank yoX," said Ors. DalloZay, and thank yoX, thank yoX, she Zent on saying (sitting doZn on the sofa Zith her dress oYer her knees, her scissors, her silks), thank yoX, thank yoX, she Zent on

saying in gratitXde to her serYants generally for helping her to be like this, to be Zhat she Zanted, gentle, generoXs-hearted. Her serYants liked her. And then this dress of hers—Zhere Zas the tear? and noZ her needle to be threaded. This Zas a faYoXrite dress, one of 6ally Parker's, the last almost she eYer made, alas, for 6ally had noZ retired, liYing at Ealing, and if eYer I haYe a moment, thoXght Clarissa (bXt neYer ZoXld she haYe a moment any more), I shall go and see her at Ealing. For she Zas a character, thoXght Clarissa, a real artist. 6he thoXght of little oXt-of-the-Zay things; yet her dresses Zere neYer TXeer. YoX coXld Zear them at Hatfield; at BXckingham Palace. 6he had Zorn them at Hatfield; at BXckingham Palace.

4Xiet descended on her, calm, content, as her needle, draZing the silk smoothly to its gentle paXse, collected the green folds together and attached them, Yery lightly, to the belt. 6o on a sXmmer's day ZaYes collect, oYerbalance, and fall; collect and fall; and the Zhole Zorld seems to be saying "that is all" more and

more ponderously, Until even the heart in the body which lies in the sun on the beach says too, That is all. Fear no more, says the heart. Fear no more, says the heart, committing its burden to some sea, which sighs collectively for all sorrows, and renews, begins, collects, lets fall. And the body alone listens to the passing bee; the waves breaking; the dog barking, far away barking and barking.

"Heaven, the front-door bell!" exclaimed Clarissa, staying her needle.

So used, she listened.

"Mrs. Dalloz will see me," said the elderly man in the hall. "Oh yes, she will see me," he repeated, putting his eye aside very benevolently, and running up stairs ever so quickly. "Yes, yes, yes," he muttered as he ran up stairs. "She will see me. After fifty years in India, Clarissa will see me."

"Who can—that can," asked Mrs. Dalloz (thinking it was extraordinary to be interrupted at eleven o'clock on the morning of the day she was giving a party), hearing a step on the stairs. She

heard a hand upon the door. She made to hide her dress, like a virgin protecting chastity, respecting privacy.

As the brass knob slipped. As the door opened, and in came—for a single second she could not remember that he was called! so surprised she was to see him, so glad, so shy, so utterly taken aback to have Peter

almost come to her unexpectedly in the morning! (She had not read his letter.)

"And how are you?" said Peter almost, positively trembling; taking both her hands; kissing both her hands. She's grown older, he thought, sitting down. I shan't tell her anything about it, he thought, for she's grown older.

She's looking at me, he thought, a sudden embarrassment coming over him, though he had kissed her hands. Putting his hand into his pocket, he took out a large pocket-knife and half opened the blade.

Exactly the same, thought Clarissa; the same queer look; the same check suit; a little more of the straight his face is, a little thinner, dryer, perhaps, but he looks awfully Zell, and just the same.

"How heavenly it is to see you again!" she exclaimed. He had his knife out. That's so like him, she thought.

He had only reached town last night, he said; would have to go down into the country at once; and how was everything, how was everybody—

Richard? Elizabeth?

"And that's all this?" he said, tilting his pen-knife towards her green dress.

He's very well dressed, thought Clarissa; yet he always criticises me.

Here she is mending her dress; mending her dress as XsXal, he thoXght; here she's been sitting all the time I'Ye been in India; mending her dress; playing aboXt; going to parties; rXnning to the HoXse and back and all that, he thoXght, groZing more and more irritated, more and more agitated, for there's nothing in the Zorld so bad for some Zomen as marriage, he thoXght; and politics; and haYing a ConserYatiYe hXsband, like the admirable 5ichard. 6o it is, so it is, he thoXght, shXtting his knife Zith a snap.

"5ichard's Yery Zell. 5ichard's at a Committee," said Clarissa.

And she opened her scissors, and said, did he mind her jXst finishing Zhat she Zas doing to her dress, for they had a party that night?

"hich I shan't ask yoX to," she said. "Oy dear Peter!" she said.

But it was delicious to hear her say that—my dear Peter! Indeed, it was all so delicious—the silver, the chairs; all so delicious!

Why wouldn't she ask him to her party? he asked.

Of course, thought Clarissa, he's enchanting! perfectly enchanting!

How I remember how impossible it was ever to make him my mind—and why did I make him my mind—not to marry him? she wondered, that awful summer?

"But it's so extraordinary that you should have come this morning!" she cried, putting her hands, one on top of another, down on her dress.

"Do you remember," she said, "how the blinds used to flap at Burton?" "They did," he said; and he remembered breakfasting alone, very



aZkZardly, Zith her father; Zho had died; and he had not Zritten to Clarissa. BXt he had neYer got on Zell Zith old Parry, that TXerXloXs, Zeak-kneed old man, Clarissa's father, -Xstin Parry.

"I often Zish I'd got on better Zith yoXr father," he said.

"BXt he neYer liked any one Zho—oXr friends," said Clarissa; and coXld haYe bitten her tongXe for thXs reminding Peter that he had Zanted to marry her.

2f coXrse I did, thoXght Peter; it almost broke my heart too, he thoXght; and Zas oYercome Zith his oZn grief, Zhich rose like a moon looked at from a terrace, ghastly beaXtifXI Zith light from the sXnken day. I Zas more Xnhappy than I'Ye eYer been since, he thoXght. And as if in trXth he Zere sitting there on the terrace he edged a little toZards Clarissa; pXt his hand oXt; raised it; let it fall. There aboYe them it hXng, that moon. 6he too seemed to be sitting Zith him on the terrace, in the moonlight.

"Herbert has it noZ," she said. "I neYer go there noZ," she said.

Then, jXst as happens on a terrace in the moonlight, Zhen one person begins to feel ashamed that he is already bored, and yet as the other sits silent, Yery TXiet, sadly looking at the moon, does not like to speak, moYes his foot, clears his throat, notices some iron scroll on a table leg, stirs a leaf, bXt says nothing—so Peter :alsh did noZ. For Zhy go back like this to the past? he thoXght. :hy make him think of it again? :hy make him sXffer, Zhen she had tortXred him so infernally? :hy?

"Do yoX remember the lake?" she said, in an abrXpt Yoice, Xnder the pressXre of an emotion Zhich caXght her heart, made the mXscles of her throat stiff, and contracted her lips in a spasm as she said "lake." For she Zas a child, throZing bread to the dXcks, betZeen her parents, and at the same time a groZn Zoman coming to her parents Zho stood by the lake, holding her life in her arms Zhich, as she neared them, greZ larger and larger in her arms, Xntil it became a Zhole life, a complete life, Zhich she pXt doZn by them and said, "This is Zhat I haYe made of it! This!" And

What had she made of it? What, indeed? sitting there seeing this morning with Peter.

She looked at Peter; her look, passing through all that time and that emotion, reached him directly; settled on him tearfully; and rose and fluttered away, as a bird touches a branch and rises and flutters away. Quite simply she wiped her eyes.

"Yes," said Peter. "Yes, yes, yes," he said, as if she drew up to the surface something which positively hurt him as it rose. Stop! Stop! he wanted to cry. For he was not old; his life was not over; not by any means. He was only just past fifty. Shall I tell her, he thought, or not? He would like to make a clean breast of it all. But she is too cold, he thought; seeing, with her scissors; Daisy would look ordinary beside Clarissa. And she would think me a failure, which I am in their sense, he thought; in the Dallozays' sense. Oh yes, he had no doubt about that; he was a failure, compared with all this—the inlaid table, the mounted paper-knife, the dolphin and the candlesticks, the chair-coyers and the old valuable English tinted prints—he was a failure! I detest the smugness of the whole affair, he thought;

Richard's doing, not Clarissa's; say that she married him. (Here Lucy came into the room, carrying silver, more silver, but

charming, slender, graceful she looked, he thought, as she stooped to pick it up.) And this has been going on all the time! he thought; Zeek after Zeek; Clarissa's life; while I—he thought; and at once everything seemed to radiate from him; journeys; rides; travels; adventures; bridge parties; love affairs; Zork; Zork, Zork! and he took out his knife quite openly—his old horn-handled knife which Clarissa could swear he had had these thirty years—and clenched his fist upon it.

That an extraordinary habit that was, Clarissa thought; always playing with a knife. Always making one feel, too, frivolous; empty-minded; a mere silly chatterbox, as he used to say. But I too, she thought, and, taking up her needle, summoned, like a queen whose guards have fallen asleep and left her unprotected (she had been quite taken aback by this visit—it had upset her) so that any one can stroll in and have a look at her where she lies with the brambles crying over her, summoned to her help the things she did; the things she liked; her husband; Elizabeth; her self, in short, which Peter hardly knew, all to come about her and beat off the enemy.

"Well, and what's happened to you?" she said. So before a battle begins, the horses paw the ground; toss their heads; the light shines on their flanks; their necks curve. So Peter Walsh and Clarissa, sitting side by side on the blue sofa, challenged each other. His powers chafed and tossed in him. He assembled from different quarters all sorts of things; praise; his career at Oxford; his marriage, which she knew nothing about; how he had loved; and altogether done his job.

"Millions of things!" he exclaimed, and, urged by the assembly of powers which were now charging this way and that and giving him the feeling at once frightening and extremely exhilarating of being rushed through the air on the shoulders of people he could no longer see, he raised his hands to his forehead.

Clarissa sat very upright; drew in her breath.

"I am in loYe," he said, not to her hoZeYer, bXt to some one raised Xp in the dark so that yoX coXld not toXch her bXt mXst lay yoXr garland doZn on the grass in the dark.

"In loYe," he repeated, noZ speaking rather dryly to Clarissa DalloZay; "in loYe Zith a girl in India." He had deposited his garland. Clarissa coXld make Zhat she ZoXld of it.

"In loYe!" she said. That he at his age shoXld be sXcked Xnder in his little boZ-tie by that monster! And there's no flesh on his neck; his hands are red; and he's si[ months older than I am! her eye flashed back to her; bXt in her heart she felt, all the same, he is in loYe. He has that, she felt; he is in loYe.

BXt the indomitable egotism Zhich for eYer rides doZn the hosts opposed to it, the riYer Zhich says on, on, on; eYen thoXgh, it admits, there may be no goal for Xs ZhateYer, still on, on; this indomitable egotism charged her cheeks Zith coloXr; made her

look Yery yoXng; Yery pink; Yery bright-eyed as she sat Zith her dress Xpon her knee, and her needle held to the end of green silk, trembling a little. He Zas in loYe! 1ot Zith her. :ith some yoXnger Zoman, of coXrse.

"And Zho is she?" she asked.

1oZ this statXe mXst be broXght from its height and set doZn betZeen them.

"A married Zoman, XnfortXnately," he said; "the Zife of a Oajor in the

Indian Army."

And Zith a cXrioXs ironical sZeetness he smiled as he placed her in this ridicXloXs Zay before Clarissa.

(All the same, he is in love, thought Clarissa.)

"He has," he continued, very reasonably, "two small children; a boy and a girl; and I have come over to see my lovers about the divorce."

There they are! he thought. Do that you like with them, Clarissa! There they are! And second by second it seemed to him that the wife of the

Major in the Indian Army (his Daisy) and her two small children became more and more lovely as Clarissa looked at them; as if he had set light to a grey pellet on a plate and there had risen up a lovely tree in the brisk sea-salted air of their intimacy (for in some ways no one understood him, felt with him, as Clarissa did)—their exquisite intimacy.

He flattered her; she fooled him, thought Clarissa; shaping the woman, the wife of the Major in the Indian Army, with three strokes of a knife.



:hat a Zaste! :hat a folly! All his life long Peter had been fooled like that; first getting sent doZn from 2[ford; ne[t marrying the girl on the boat going oXt to India; noZ the Zife of a 0ajor in the Indian Army— thank HeaYen she had refXsed to marry him! 6till, he Zas in loYe; her old friend, her dear Peter, he Zas in loYe.

"BXt Zhat are yoX going to do?" she asked him. 2h the laZyers and solicitors, 0essrs. Hooper and Grateley of /incoln's Inn, they Zere going to do it, he said. And he actXally pared his nails Zith his pocket-knife.

For HeaYen's sake, leaYe yoXr knife alone! she cried to herself in irrepressible irritation; it Zas his silly XnconYentionality, his Zeakness; his lack of the ghost of a notion Zhat any one else Zas feeling that annoyed her, had alZays annoyed her; and noZ at his age, hoZ silly!

I know all that, Peter thought; I know that I'm Xp against, he thought, running his finger along the blade of his knife, Clarissa and DalloZay and

all the rest of them; but I'll show Clarissa—and then to his utter surprise, suddenly thrown by those uncontrollable forces through the air, he burst into tears; Zep; Zep ZithoXt the least shame, sitting on the sofa, the tears running down his cheeks.

And Clarissa had leant forward, taken his hand, drawn him to her, kissed him,—actually had felt his face on hers before she could do the brandishing of silver flashing—plumes like pampas grass in a tropic gale in her breast, which, subsiding, left her holding his hand, patting his knee and, feeling as she sat back extraordinarily at her ease with him and light-hearted, all in a clap it came over her, If I had married him, this gaiety would have been mine all day!

It was all over for her. The sheet was stretched and the bed narrow. She had gone Xp into the tower alone and left them blackberrying in the sun. The door had shut, and there among the dust of fallen

plaster and the litter of birds' nests hoZ distant the YieZ had looked, and the soXnds came thin and chill (once on /eith Hill, she remembered), and 5ichard, 5ichard! she cried, as a sleeper in the night starts and stretches a hand in the dark for help. /Xnching Zith /ady BrXton, it came back to her. He has left me; I am alone for eYer, she thoXght, folding her hands Xpon her knee.

Peter :alsh had got Xp and crossed to the ZindoZ and stood Zith his back to her, flicking a bandanna handkerchief from side to side. Oasterly and dry and desolate he looked, his thin shoXlder-blades lifting his coat slightly; bloZing his nose Yiolently. Take me Zith yoX, Clarissa thoXght impXlsiYely, as if he Zere starting directly Xpon some great Yoyage; and then, ne[t moment, it Zas as if the fiYe acts of a play that had been Yery e[citing and moYing Zere noZ oYer and she had liYed a lifetime in them and had rXn aZay, had liYed Zith Peter, and it Zas noZ oYer.

1oZ it Zas time to moYe, and, as a Zoman gathers her things together, her cloak, her gloYes, her opera-glasses, and gets Xp to go oXt of the theatre into the street, she rose from the sofa and Zent to Peter.

And it was aZfXlly strange, he thoXght, hoZ she still had the poZer,  
as she came tinkling, rXstling, still had the poZer as she came  
across the room, to

make the moon, Zhich he detested, rise at BoXrton on the terrace  
in the sXmmer sky.

"Tell me," he said, sei]ing her by the shoXlders. "Are yoX happy,  
Clarissa? Does 5ichard—"

The door opened.

"Here is my Eli]abeth," said Clarissa, emotionally, histrionically,  
perhaps. "HoZ d'y do?" said Eli]abeth coming forZard.

The soXnd of Big Ben striking the half-hoXr strXck oXt betZeen  
them Zith e[traordinary YigoXr, as if a yoXng man, strong,

indifferent, inconsiderate, Zere sZinging dXmb-bells this Zay and that.

"HXllo, Eli]abeth!" cried Peter, stXffing his handkerchief into his pocket, going TXickly to her, saying "Good-bye, Clarissa" ZithoXt looking at her, leaYing the room TXickly, and rXnning doZnstairs and opening the hall door.

"Peter! Peter!" cried Clarissa, folloZing him oXt on to the landing. "Oy party to-night! 5emember my party to-night!" she cried, haYing to raise her Yoice against the roar of the open air, and, oYerZhelmed by the traffic and the soXnd of all the clocks striking, her Yoice crying "5emember my party to-night!" soXnded frail and thin and Yery far aZay as Peter :alsh shXt the door.

## CHAPTER IV

Remember my party, remember my party, said Peter Walsh as he stepped down the street, speaking to himself rhythmically, in time with the flow of the sound, the direct downright sound of Big Ben striking the half-hour. (The leaden circles dissolved in the air.) These parties, he thought; Clarissa's parties. Why does she give these parties, he thought. Not that he blamed her or this effigy of a man in a tail-coat with a carnation in his buttonhole coming towards him. Only one person in the world could be as he was, in love. And there he was, this fortunate man, himself, reflected in the plate-glass window of a motor-car manufacturer in Victoria Street. All India lay behind him; plains, mountains; epidemics of cholera; a district twice as big as Ireland; decisions he had come to alone—he, Peter Walsh; who was now really for the first time in his life, in love. Clarissa had grown hard, he thought; and a trifle sentimental into the bargain, he suspected, looking at the great motor-cars capable of doing—how many miles on how many gallons? For he had a turn for mechanics; had invented a plough in his district, had ordered wheel-barrows from England, but the coolies wouldn't use them, all of which Clarissa knew nothing whatever about.

The Zay she said "Here is my Eli]abeth!"—that annoyed him. :hy not "Here's Eli]abeth" simply? It Zas insincere. And Eli]abeth didn't like it either. (6till the last tremors of the great booming Yoice shook the air roXnd him; the half-hoXr; still early; only half-past eleYen still.) For he

Xnderstood yoXng people; he liked them. There Zas alZays something cold in Clarissa, he thoXght. 6he had alZays, eYen as a girl, a sort of timidity, Zhich in middle age becomes conYentionality, and then it's all Xp, it's all Xp, he thoXght, looking rather drearily into the glassy depths, and Zondering Zhether by calling at that hoXr he had annoyed her; oYercome Zith shame sXddenly at haYing been a fool; Zept; been emotional; told her eYerything, as XsXal, as XsXal.

As a cloXd crosses the sXn, silence falls on /ondon; and falls on the mind. Effort ceases. Time flaps on the mast. There Ze stop; there Ze stand.

5igid, the skeleton of habit alone Xpholds the hXman frame. :here there is nothing, Peter :alsh said to himself; feeling holloZed oXt, Xtterly empty Zithin. Clarissa refXsed me, he thoXght. He stood there thinking, Clarissa refXsed me.

Ah, said Mr. Margaret's, like a hostess who comes into her dressing-room on the very stroke of the hour and finds her guests there already. I am not late. No, it is precisely half-past eleven, she says. Yet, though she is perfectly right, her voice, being the voice of the hostess, is reluctant to inflict its individuality. Some grief for the past holds it back; some concern for the present. It is half-past eleven, she says, and the sound of

Mr. Margaret's glides into the recesses of the heart and breathes itself in ring after ring of sound, like something alive which wants to confide itself, to disperse itself, to be, with a tremor of delight, at rest—like Clarissa herself, though Peter Walsh, coming down the stairs on the stroke of the hour in white. It is Clarissa herself, he thought, with a deep emotion, and an extraordinarily clear, yet peculiar, recollection of her, as if this bell

had come into the room years ago, where they sat at some moment of great intimacy, and had gone from one to the other and had left, like a bee with honey, laden with the moment. But that room? That moment? And why had he been so profoundly happy when the clock was striking? Then, as

the sound of Mr. Margaret's languished, he thought, she has been ill, and the sound expressed languor and suffering. It was her heart, he remembered; and the sudden loneliness of the final stroke tolled for death that surprised in the midst of life, Clarissa falling where she stood, in her dressing-room. No! No! he cried. She is not



dead! I am not old, he cried, and marched Xp :hitehall, as if there rolled doZn to him, YigoroXs, Xnending, his fXtXre.

He Zas not old, or set, or dried in the least. As for caring Zhat they said of him—the DalloZays, the :hitbreads, and their set, he cared not a straZ— not a straZ (thoXgh it Zas trXe he ZoXld haYe, some time or other, to see Zhether 5ichard coXldn't help him to some job). 6triding, staring, he glared at the statXe of the DXke of Cambridge. He had been sent doZn

from 2[ford—trXe. He had been a 6ocialist, in some sense a failXre—trXe.

6till the fXtXre of ciYilisation lies, he thoXght, in the hands of yoXng men like that; of yoXng men sXch as he Zas, thirty years ago; Zith their loYe of abstract principles; getting books sent oXt to them all the Zay from

/ondon to a peak in the Himalayas; reading science; reading philosophy. The fXtXre lies in the hands of yoXng men like that, he thoXght.

A patter like the patter of leaYes in a Zood came from behind, and Zith it a rXstling, regXlar thXdding soXnd, Zhich as it oYertook him drXmmed his thoXghts, strict in step, Xp :hitehall, ZithoXt his

doing. Boys in uniform, carrying guns, marched with their eyes ahead of them, marched, their arms stiff, and on their faces an expression like the letters of a legend written round the base of a statue praising duty, gratitude, fidelity, loyalty of England.

It is, thought Peter Walsh, beginning to keep step with them, a very fine training. But they did not look robust. They were zealous for the most part, boys of sixteen, who might, to-morrow, stand behind barrels of rice, cakes of soap on counters. To-day they were on them unmixed with sensual pleasure or daily preoccupations the solemnity of the breath which they had fetched from Finsbury Park to the empty tomb. They had taken their oath. The traffic respected it; vans were stopped.

I can't keep up with them, Peter Walsh thought, as they marched up Whitehall, and were enough, on they marched, past him, past every one, in their steady gait, as if one will worked legs and arms uniformly, and life, with its varieties, its intricacies, had been laid under a payment of monuments and breaths and dragged into a

stiff yet staring corpse by discipline. One had to respect it; one might laugh; but one had to respect it, he thought. There they go, thought Peter, passing at the edge of the pavement; and all the elevated statues, Nelson, Gordon, Haylock, the black, the spectacular images of great soldiers stood looking ahead of them, as if they too had made the same renunciation (Peter felt he too had made it, the great renunciation), trampled under the same temptations, and achieved at length a marble stare. But the stare Peter

did not count for himself in the least; though he could respect it in others. He could respect it in boys. They don't know the troubles of the flesh yet, he thought, as the marching boys disappeared in the direction of the Strand—all that I've been through, he thought, crossing the road, and standing under Gordon's statue, Gordon whom as a boy he had worshipped; Gordon standing lonely with one leg raised and his arms crossed,—poor Gordon, he thought.

And just because nobody yet knew he was in London, except Clarissa, and the earth, after the Voyage, still seemed an island to him, the strangeness of standing alone, alone, unknown, at half-past eleven in Trafalgar Square

overtaken him. What is it? Where am I? And why, after all, does one do it? he thought, the distance seeming all moonshine. And down his mind went flat as a marsh, and three great emotions boiled

oYer him; Xnderstanding; a Yast philanthropy; and finally, as if the resXlt of the others, an irrepressible, e[TXisite delight; as if inside his brain by another hand strings Zere pXlled, shXtters moYed, and he, haYing nothing to do Zith it, yet stood at the opening of endless aYenXes, doZn Zhich if he chose he might Zander. He had not felt so yoXng for years.

He had escaped! Zas Xtterly free—as happens in the doZnfall of habit Zhen the mind, like an XngXarded flame, boZs and bends and seems aboXt to bloZ from its holding. I haYen't felt so yoXng for years! thoXght Peter, escaping (only of coXrse for an hoXr or so) from being precisely Zhat he Zas, and feeling like a child Zho rXns oXt of doors, and sees, as he rXns, his old nXrse ZaYing at the Zrong ZindoZ. BXt she's e[traordinarily attractiYe, he thoXght, as, Zalking across Trafalgar 6TXare in the direction of the Haymarket, came a yoXng Zoman Zho, as she passed Gordon's statXe, seemed, Peter :alsh thoXght (sXsceptible as he Zas), to shed Yeil after Yeil, Xntil she became the Yery Zoman he had alZays had in mind; yoXng, bXt stately; merry, bXt discreet; black, bXt enchanting.

straightening himself and stealthily fingering his pocket-knife he started after her to follow this woman, this excitement, which seemed even with its back turned to shed on him a light which connected them, which singled him out, as if the random uproar of the traffic had whispered

through hollowed hands his name, not Peter, but his private name which he called himself in his own thoughts. "Yes," she said, only "yes," saying it with her white gloves and her shoulders. Then the thin long cloak which

the wind stirred as she walked past Dent's shop in Cockspur Street blew out with an enveloping kindness, a motherly tenderness, as of arms that would open and take the tired—

But she's not married; she's young; quite young, thought Peter, the red carnation he had seen her wear as she came across Trafalgar Square

burning again in his eyes and making her lips red. But she waited at the kerbstone. There was a dignity about her. She was not worldly, like Clarissa; not rich, like Clarissa. Was she, he wondered as she moved, respectable? Little, with a lady's flickering tongue, he thought (for one must invent, must allow oneself a little diversion), a cool waiting wit, a darting wit; not noisy.

She moved; she crossed; he followed her. To embarrass her was the last thing he wished. But if she stopped he would say "Come and have an ice," he would say, and she would answer, perfectly simply, "Oh yes."

But other people got between them in the street, obstructing him, blotting her out. He pursued; she changed. There was color in her cheeks; mockery in her eyes; he was an adventurer, reckless, he thought, swift, daring, indeed (landed as he was last night from India) a romantic buccaneer, careless of all these damned proprieties, yellow dressing-gowns, pipes, fishing-rods, in the shop windows; and respectability and evening parties and spruce old men wearing white slippers beneath their

waistcoats. He was a buccaneer. Then and on she went, across Piccadilly, and up Regent Street, ahead of him, her cloak, her gloves, her shoulders combining with the fringes and the laces and the feather boas in the windows to make the spirit of finery and whimsy which kindled out of the shops on to the pavement, as the light of a lamp goes glimmering at night over hedges in the darkness.

/aXghing and delightfXI, she had crossed 2[ford 6treet and Great Portland

6treet and tXrned doZn one of the little streets, and noZ, and noZ, the great moment Zas approaching, for noZ she slackened, opened her bag, and

Zith one look in his direction, bXt not at him, one look that bade fareZell, sXmmed Xp the Zhole sitXation and dismissed it triXmphantly, for eYer, had fitted her key, opened the door, and gone! Clarissa's Yoice saying,

5emember my party, 5emember my party, sang in his ears. The hoXse Zas one of those flat red hoXses Zith hanging floZer-baskets of YagXe impropriety. It Zas oYer.

:ell, I'Ye had my fXn; I'Ye had it, he thoXght, looking Xp at the sZinging baskets of pale geraniXms. And it Zas smashed to atoms—his fXn, for it Zas half made Xp, as he kneZ Yery Zell; inYented, this escapade Zith the

girl; made Xp, as one makes Xp the better part of life, he thoXght—making oneself Xp; making her Xp; creating an e[TXisite amXsement, and something more. BXt odd it Zas, and TXite trXe; all this one coXld neYer share—it smashed to atoms.

He turned; went up the street, thinking to find somewhere to sit, till it was time for Lincoln's Inn—for Messrs. Hooper and Grateley. Where should he go? No matter. Up the street, then, to St. James's Park. His boots on the pavement struck out "no matter"; for it was early, still very early.

It was a splendid morning too. Like the pulse of a perfect heart, life struck straight through the streets. There was no fumbling—no hesitation.

Slipping and sliding, accurately, punctually, noiselessly, there, precisely at the right instant, the motor-car stopped at the door. The girl, silk-stockinged, feathered, effervescent, bent not to him particularly attractively (for he had had his fling), alighted. Admirable butlers, tiny chow dogs, halls laid in black and white lozenges with white blinds blowing, Peter sat through the opened door and approved of. A splendid achievement in its own day, after all, London; the season; civilisation. Coming as he did from a respectable Anglo-Indian family which for at least three generations had administered the affairs of a continent (it's strange, he thought, that a sentiment I have about that, disliking India, and empire, and army as he did), there were moments when civilisation,



eYen of this sort, seemed dear to him as a personal possession; moments of pride in England; in bXtlers; choZ dogs; girls in their secXrity. 5idicXloXs enoXgh, still there it is, he thoXght. And the doctors and men of bXsiness and capable Zomen all going aboXt their bXsiness, pXnctXal, alert, robXst, seemed to him Zholly admirable, good felloZs, to Zhom one ZoXld

entrXst one's life, companions in the art of liYing, Zho ZoXld see one throXgh. :hat Zith one thing and another, the shoZ Zas really Yery tolerable; and he ZoXld sit doZn in the shade and smoke.

There Zas 5egent's Park. Yes. As a child he had Zalked in 5egent's Park— odd, he thoXght, hoZ the thoXght of childhood keeps coming back to me— the resXlt of seeing Clarissa, perhaps; for Zomen liYe mXch more in the past than Ze do, he thoXght. They attach themselYes to places; and their fathers—a Zoman's alZays proXd of her father. BoXrton Zas a nice place, a

Yery nice place, bXt I coXld neYer get on Zith the old man, he thoXght. There Zas TXite a scene one night—an argXment aboXt something or other, Zhat, he coXld not remember. Politics presXmably.

Yes, he remembered Regent's Park; the long straight Walk; the little house where one bought air-balls to the left; an absurd statue with an inscription somewhere or other. He looked for an empty seat. He did not want to be bothered (feeling a little drowsy as he did) by people asking him the time. An elderly grey nurse, with a baby asleep in its perambulator—that was the best he could do for himself; sit down at the far end of the seat by that nurse.

She's a queer-looking girl, he thought, suddenly remembering Elizabeth as she came into the room and stood by her mother. Good-looking; quite good-looking—no, not exactly pretty; handsome rather; and she can't be more than eighteen. Probably she doesn't get on with Clarissa. "There's my Elizabeth"—that sort of thing—why not "Here's Elizabeth" simply?—trying to make out, like most mothers, that things are what they're not. She trusts to her charm too much, he thought. She overdoes it.

The rich benignant cigar smoke eddied coolly down his throat; he puffed it out again in rings which breathed the air bravely for a moment; like, circular—I shall try and get a word alone with Elizabeth to-night, he thought—then began to dribble into her-

glass shapes and taper away; odd shapes they take, he thought.  
Suddenly he closed his eyes, raised his hand with an effort, and  
threw away the heavy end of his cigar. A great brush swept  
smooth across his mind, sweeping across it moving branches,  
children's voices, the shuffle of feet, and people passing, and  
humming traffic, rising and falling traffic. Down, down he sank into  
the pillows and feathers of sleep, sank, and was muffled over.

## CHAPTER V

The grey nurse resumed her knitting as Peter Walsh, on the hot seat beside her, began snoring. In her grey dress, moving her hands indefatigably yet anxiously, she seemed like the champion of the rights of sleepers, like one of those spectral presences which rise in twilight in woods made of sky and branches. The solitary traveller, hunter of lanes, discoverer of ferns, and destroyer of great hemlock plants, looking up, suddenly sees the giant figure at the end of the ride.

By conviction an atheist perhaps, he is taken by surprise with moments of extraordinary exaltation. Nothing exists outside his except a state of mind, he thinks; a desire for solace, for relief, for something outside these miserable pigmies, these feeble, these wretched, these crazy men and women. But if he can conceive of her, then in some sort she exists, he thinks, and advancing down the path with his eyes upon sky and branches he rapidly endows them with womanhood; sees with amazement how graye they become; how majestically, as the breeze stirs them, they dispense with a dark flutter of the leaves charity, comprehension, abolition, and

then, flinging themselves suddenly aloft, confound the piety of their aspect with a wild carouse.

Such are the visions which proffer great cornucopias full of fruit to the solitary traveller, or murmur in his ear like sirens lolling away on the green sea waves, or are dashed in his face like bunches of roses, or rise to the surface like pale faces which fishermen flounder through floods to embrace.

Such are the visions which ceaselessly float up, pace beside, past their

faces in front of, the actual thing; often overpowering the solitary traveller and taking away from him the sense of the earth, the wish to return, and giving him for substitute a general peace, as if (so he thinks as he

advances down the forest ride) all this fever of living were simplicity itself; and myriads of things merged in one thing; and this figure, made of sky and branches as it is, had risen from the troubled sea (he is elderly, past fifty now) as a shape might be struck up out of the waves to show

doZn from her magnificent hands compassion, comprehension,  
absolXtion.

6o, he thinks, may I neYer go back to the lamplight; to the sitting-  
room;

neYer finish my book; neYer knock oXt my pipe; neYer ring for Ors.  
TXrner to clear aZay; rather let me Zalk straight on to this great  
figXre, Zho Zill, Zith a toss of her head, moXnt me on her  
streamers and let me bloZ to nothingness Zith the rest.

6Xch are the Yisions. The solitary traYeller is soon beyond the  
Zood; and there, coming to the door Zith shaded eyes, possibly to  
look for his retXrn, Zith hands raised, Zith Zhite apron bloZing, is  
an elderly Zoman Zho seems (so poZerfXI is this infirmity) to seek,  
oYer a desert, a lost son; to search for a rider destroyed; to be the  
figXre of the mother Zhose sons

haYe been killed in the battles of the Zorld. 6o, as the solitary  
traYeller adYances doZn the Yillage street Zhere the Zomen stand  
knitting and the men dig in the garden, the eYening seems  
ominoXs; the figXres still; as if some aXgXst fate, knoZn to them,  
aZaited ZithoXt fear, Zere aboXt to sZleep them into complete  
annihilation.

Indoors among ordinary things, the cupboard, the table, the  
ZindoZ-sill

Zith its geraniXms, sXddenly the oXtline of the landlady, bending  
to

remoYe the cloth, becomes soft Zith light, an adorable emblem  
Zhich only the recollection of cold hXman contacts forbids Xs to  
embrace. 6he takes the marmalade; she shXts it in the cupboard.

"There is nothing more to-night, sir?"

BXt to Zhom does the solitary traYeller make reply?

## CHAPTER VI

So the elderly nurse knitted over the sleeping baby in Segent's Park. So

Peter Walsh snored.

He woke Zith with extreme suddenness, saying to himself, "The death of the soXl."

"/ord, /ord!" he said to himself as he stretched and opened his eyes. "The death of the soXl." The Zords attached themselves to some scene, to some room, to some past he had been dreaming of. It became clearer; the scene, the room, the past he had been dreaming of.

It was at Boxton that summer, early in the 'nineties, when he was so passionately in love with Clarissa. There were a great many people there, laughing and talking, sitting round a table after tea and the room was bathed in yellow light and full of cigarette



smoke. They were talking about a man who had married his housemaid, one of the neighboring sisters, he had forgotten his name. He had married his housemaid, and she had been brought to Boston to call—an affair it had been. She was absurdly over-dressed, "like a cockatoo," Clarissa had said, imitating her, and she never stopped talking. On and on she went, on and on. Clarissa imitated

her. Then somebody said—bally bet on it was—did it make any real difference to one's feelings to know that before they'd married she had had a baby? (In those days, in mixed company, it was a bold thing to say.) He could see Clarissa now, turning bright pink; somehow contracting; and saying, "Oh, I shall never be able to speak to her again!" Whereupon the whole party sitting round the tea-table seemed to vibrate. It was very uncomfortable.

He hadn't blamed her for minding the fact, since in those days a girl brought up as she was, knew nothing, but it was her manner that annoyed him; timid; hard; something arrogant; unimaginative; proud. "The death of the soul." He had said that instinctively, ticketing the moment as he used to do—the death of her soul.

Every one Zobbed; every one seemed to bow, as she spoke, and then to stand up different. He could see fully the boy, like a child who has been in mischief, leaning forward, rather flushed, wanting to talk, but afraid, and Clarissa did frighten people. (The man Clarissa's greatest friend, always about the place, totally unlike her, an attractive creature, handsome, dark, with the reputation in those days of great daring and he used to give her cigars, which she smoked in her bedroom. He had either been engaged to somebody or quarrelled with her family and old Parry disliked them both equally, which was a great bond.) Then Clarissa, still with an air of being offended with them all, got up, made some excuse, and went off, alone. As she opened the door, in came that great shaggy dog which ran after sheep.

She flung herself upon him, went into raptures. It was as if she said to Peter—it was all aimed at him, he knew—"I know you thought me absurd about that woman just now; but see how extraordinarily sympathetic I am; see how I love my job!"

They had always this queer power of communicating with the gods. He knew directly he criticised her. Then she would do something quite obvious to defend herself, like this fuss with the dog—but it never took him in, he always saw through Clarissa. It

that he said anything, of course; just sat looking glum. It was the way their quarrels often began.

When he shut the door. At once he became extremely depressed. It all seemed useless—going on being in love; going on quarrelling; going on making it up, and he wandered off alone, among orchards, stables, looking at the horses. (The place was quite a humble one; the Parrys were never very well off; but there were always grooms and stable-boys about—Clarissa loved riding—and an old coachman—what was his name?—an old nurse, old Moody, old Goody, some such name they called her, whom one was taken to visit in a little room with lots of photographs, lots of bird-cages.)

It was an awful evening! He grew more and more gloomy, not about that only; about everything. And he couldn't see her; couldn't explain to her; couldn't have it out. There were always people about—she'd go on as if nothing had happened. That was the devilish part of her—this coldness, this suddenness, something very profound in her, which he had felt again this morning talking to her; an impenetrability. Yet Heaven knows he loved her. When

had some TXeer poZer of fiddling on one's nerYes, tXrning one's nerYes to fiddle-strings, yes.

He had gone in to dinner rather late, from some idiotic idea of making himself felt, and had sat doZn by old Oiss Parry—AXnt Helena—Or. Parry's sister, Zho Zas sXpposed to preside. There she sat in her Zhite Cashmere shaZl, Zith her head against the ZindoZ—a formidable old

lady, bXt kind to him, for he had foXnd her some rare floZer, and she Zas a

great botanist, marching off in thick boots Zith a black collecting-bo[ slXng betZeen her shoXlders. He sat doZn beside her, and coXldn't speak. EYerything seemed to race past him; he jXst sat there, eating. And then half-Zay throXgh dinner he made himself look across at Clarissa for the first time. 6he Zas talking to a yoXng man on her right. He had a sXdden reYelation. "6he Zill marry that man," he said to himself. He didn't eYen knoZ his name.

For of coXrse it Zas that afternoon, that Yery afternoon, that DalloZay had come oYer; and Clarissa called him ":ickham"; that

Was the beginning of it all. Somebody had brought him over; and Clarissa got his name wrong.

She introduced him to everybody as Wickham. At last he said "My name is Darcy!"—that was his first name of Mr. Darcy—a fair young man, rather awkward, sitting on a deck-chair, and blushing over "My name is

Darcy!" She really got hold of it; always after that she called him "My name is Darcy!"

He was a prey to relations at that time. This one—that she would marry Darcy—was blinding—overwhelming at the moment. There was a sort of—how could he put it?—a sort of ease in her manner to him; something maternal; something gentle. They were talking about politics. All through dinner he tried to hear what they were saying.

Afterwards he could remember standing by old Miss Parry's chair in the drawing-room. Clarissa came up, with her perfect manners, like a real hostess, and wanted to introduce him to some one—spoke as if they had never met before, which enraged him. Yet even then

he admired her for it. He admired her coXrage; her social instinct; he admired her poZer of carrying things throXgh. "The perfect hostess," he said to her, ZhereXpon she Zinced all oYer. BXt he meant her to feel it. He ZoXld haYe done anything to hXrt her after seeing her Zith DalloZay. 6o she left him. And he had a feeling that they Zere all gathered together in a conspiracy against him—laXghing and talking—behind his back. There he stood by Oiss Parry's chair as thoXgh he had been cXt oXt of Zood, he talking aboXt Zild floZers. 1eYer, neYer had he sXffered so infernally! He mXst haYe forgotten eYen to pretend to listen; at last he Zoke Xp; he saZ Oiss Parry looking rather distXrbed, rather indignant, Zith her prominent eyes fi[ed.

He almost cried oXt that he coXldn't attend becaXse he Zas in Hell! People began going oXt of the room. He heard them talking aboXt fetching cloaks; aboXt its being cold on the Zater, and so on. They Zere going boating on the lake by moonlight—one of 6ally's mad ideas. He coXld hear her describing the moon. And they all Zent oXt. He Zas left TXite alone.

"Don't yoX Zant to go Zith them?" said AXnt Helena—old Oiss Parry!— she had gXessed. And he tXrned roXnd and there Zas

Clarissa again. She had come back to fetch him. He was overcome by her generosity—her goodness.

"Come along," she said. "They're waiting." He had never felt so happy in the whole of his life! Without a word they made it up. They walked down to the lake. He had twenty minutes of perfect happiness. Her voice, her laugh, her dress (something floating, white, crimson), her spirit, her adventures; she made them all disembark and explore the island; she startled a hen; she laughed; she sang. And all the time, he knew perfectly well, Dallozay was falling in love with her; she was falling in love with Dallozay; but it didn't seem to matter. Nothing mattered. They sat on the ground and talked—he and Clarissa. They went in and out of each other's minds without any effort. And then in a second it was over. He said to himself as they were getting into the boat, "She will marry that man," dully, without any resentment; but it was an obvious thing. Dallozay would marry Clarissa.

Dallozay rode them in. He said nothing. But somehow as they watched him start, jumping on to his bicycle to ride twenty miles through the woods, wobbling off down the drive, waving his hand

and disappearing, he obYioXsly did feel, instinctiYely,  
tremendoXsly, strongly, all that; the night; the romance; Clarissa.  
He deserYed to haYe her.

For himself, he Zas absXrd. His demands Xpon Clarissa (he coXld  
see it noZ) Zere absXrd. He asked impossible things. He made  
terrible scenes.

6he ZoXld haYe accepted him still, perhaps, if he had been less  
absXrd.

6ally thoXght so. 6he Zrote him all that sXmmer long letters; hoZ  
they had talked of him; hoZ she had praised him, hoZ Clarissa  
bXrst into tears! It Zas an e[traordinary sXmmer—all letters,  
scenes, telegrams—arriYing at BoXrton early in the morning,  
hanging aboXt till the serYants Zere Xp;

appalling tête-à-têtes Zith old Or. Parry at breakfast; AXnt Helena  
formidable bXt kind; 6ally sZeeing him off for talks in the  
Yegetable garden; Clarissa in bed Zith headaches.

The final scene, the terrible scene Zhich he belieYed had mattered  
more than anything in the Zhole of his life (it might be an



e[aggeration—bXt still so it did seem noZ) happened at three o'clock in the afternoon of a Yery hot day. It Zas a trifle that led Xp to it—6ally at lXnch saying something aboXt DalloZay, and calling him "Oy name is DalloZay"; ZhereXpon Clarissa sXddenly stiffened, coloXred, in a Zay she had, and rapped oXt sharply, ":e'Ye had enoXgh of that feeble joke." That Zas all; bXt for him it Zas precisely as if she had said, "I'm only amXsing myself Zith yoX; I'Ye an Xnderstanding Zith 5ichard DalloZay." 6o he took it. He had not slept for nights. "It's got to be finished one Zay or the other," he said to himself. He sent a note to her by 6ally asking her to meet him by the foXntain at three. "6omething Yery important has happened," he scribbled at the end of it.

The foXntain Zas in the middle of a little shrXbbery, far from the hoXse, Zith shrXbs and trees all roXnd it. There she came, eYen before the time, and they stood Zith the foXntain betZeen them, the spoXt (it Zas broken) dribbling Zater incessantly. HoZ sights fi[ themselYes Xpon the mind! For e[ample, the YiYid green moss.

She did not move. "Tell me the truth, tell me the truth," he kept on saying. He felt as if his forehead would burst. She seemed contracted, petrified.

She did not move. "Tell me the truth," he repeated, when suddenly that old man Breitkopf popped his head in carrying the Times; stared at them; gaped; and went away. They neither of them moved. "Tell me the truth," he repeated. He felt that he was grinding against something physically hard; she was unyielding. She was like iron, like flint, rigid as the backbone.

And when she said, "It's no use. It's no use. This is the end"—after he had spoken for hours, it seemed, with the tears running down his cheeks—it was as if she had hit him in the face. She turned, she left him, went away.

"Clarissa!" he cried. "Clarissa!" But she never came back. It was over. He

Went away that night. He never saw her again.

## CHAPTER VII

It was as if, he cried, as if, as if!

Still, the sun was hot. Still, one got other things. Still, life had a way of adding day to day. Still, he thought, yearning and beginning to take notice

—Seventy's Park had changed very little since he was a boy, except for the squirrels—still, presumably there were compensations—  
Then little Elise

One day, when she had been picking up pebbles to add to the pebble collection which she and her brother were making on the nursery mantelpiece, she slipped her hand down on the nurse's knee and slipped off again full tilt into a lady's legs. Peter almost laughed out.

But when she was saying to herself, It's wicked; why should I suffer? she was asking, as she walked down the broad

path. I can't stand it any longer, she was saying, having left  
optimism, who wasn't

optimism any longer, to say hard, cruel, Zicked things, to talk to  
himself, to talk to a dead man, on the seat over there; When the  
child ran full tilt into her, fell flat, and burst out crying.

That was comforting rather. She stood her upright, dusted her  
frock, kissed her.

But for herself she had done nothing wrong; she had loved  
optimism; she had been happy; she had had a beautiful home,  
and there her sisters lived still, making hats. Why should she suffer?

The child ran straight back to its nurse, and Mrs. Jia saw her scolded,  
comforted, taken up by the nurse who put down her knitting, and  
the kind-looking man gave her his watch to hold open to comfort  
her—but why should she be exposed? Why not left in Olan? Why  
tortured? Why?

slightly Zayed by tears the broad path, the nurse, the man in grey, the perambulator, rose and fell before her eyes. To be rocked by this malignant torturer was her lot. But why? She was like a bird sheltering under the thin hollow of a leaf, who blinks at the sun when the leaf moves; starts at the crack of a dry twig. She was exposed; she was surrounded by the enormous trees, vast clouds of an indifferent world, exposed; tortured; and why should she suffer? Why?

She froze; she stamped her foot. She must go back again to Beptimus since it was almost time for them to be going to Sir William Bradshaw.

She must go back and tell him, go back to him sitting there on the green chair under the tree, talking to himself, or to that dead man Evans, whom she had only seen once for a moment in the shop. He had seemed a nice quiet man; a great friend of Beptimus's, and he had been killed in the war. But such things happen to every one. Every one has friends who were killed in the war. Every one gives up something when they marry. She had given up her home. She had come to live here, in this awful city. But

Beptimus let himself think about horrible things, as she could too, if she tried. He had grown stranger and stranger. He said people

Zere talking behind the bedroom Zalls. Ors. Filmer thoXght it odd.  
He saZ things too

—he had seen an old Zoman's head in the middle of a fern. Yet he  
coXld be happy Zhen he chose. They Zent to Hampton CoXrt on  
top of a bXs, and they Zere perfectly happy. All the little red and  
yelloZ floZers Zere oXt on the grass, like floating lamps he said,  
and talked and chattered and

laXghed, making Xp stories. 6Xddenly he said, "1oZ Ze Zill kill  
oXrselfYes," Zhen they Zere standing by the riYer, and he looked at  
it Zith a look Zhich she had seen in his eyes Zhen a train Zent by,  
or an omnibXs— a look as if something fascinated him; and she  
felt he Zas going from her and she caXght him by the arm. BXt  
going home he Zas perfectly TXiet— perfectly reasonable. He  
ZoXld argXe Zith her aboXt killing themselfYes; and e[plain hoZ  
Zicked people Zere; hoZ he coXld see them making Xp lies as they  
passed in the street. He kneZ all their thoXghts, he said; he kneZ  
eYerything. He kneZ the meaning of the Zorld, he said.

Then Zhen they got back he coXld hardly Zalk. He lay on the sofa  
and made her hold his hand to preYent him from falling doZn,  
doZn, he cried, into the flames! and saZ faces laXghing at him,  
calling him horrible

disgusting names, from the Zalls, and hands pointing round the screen. Yet they were there alone. But he began to talk aloud, answering people, laughing, crying, getting very excited and making her write things down. Perfect nonsense it was; about death; about Miss Isabel Pole. She could stand it no longer. She would go back.

She was close to him now, could see him staring at the sky, muttering, clasping his hands. Yet Dr. Holmes said there was nothing the matter with him. What then had happened—why had he gone, then, why, when she sat by him, did he start, frozen at her, move away, and point at her hand, take her hand, look at it terrified?

Was it that she had taken off her wedding ring? "My hand has grown so thin," she said. "I have put it in my purse," she told him.

He dropped her hand. Their marriage was over, he thought, with agony, with relief. The rope was cut; he mounted; he was free, as it

Zas decreed that he, 6eptimXs, the lord of men, shoXld be free; alone (since his Zife had throZn aZay her Zedding ring; since she had left him), he, 6eptimXs, Zas alone, called forth in adYance of the mass of men to hear the trXth, to learn the meaning, Zhich noZ at last, after all the toils of ciYilisation— Greeks, 5omans, 6hakespeare, DarZin, and noZ himself—Zas to be giYen Zhole to... . "To Zhom?" he asked aloXd. "To the Prime 0inister," the Yoices Zhich rXstled aboYe his head replied. The sXpreme secret mXst be told to the Cabinet; first that trees are aliYe; ne[t there is no crime; ne[t loYe, XniYersal loYe, he mXttered, gasping, trembling, painfXlly draZing oXt these profoXnd trXths Zhich needed, so deep Zere they, so difficXlt, an immense effort to speak oXt, bXt the Zorld Zas entirely changed by them for eYer.

1o crime; loYe; he repeated, fXmbling for his card and pencil, Zhen a 6kye terrier snXffed his troXsers and he started in an agony of fear. It Zas

tXrning into a man! He coXld not Zatch it happen! It Zas horrible, terrible to see a dog become a man! At once the dog trotted aZay.



Heavenly merciful, infinitely benignant. It spared him, pardoned his weakness. But that was the scientific explanation (for one must be scientific about all things)? Why could he see through bodies, see

into the future, when dogs will become men? It was the heat, surely, operating upon a brain made sensitive by eons of evolution.

Scientifically speaking, the flesh was melted off the world. His body was macerated until only the nerve fibres were left. It was spread like a veil upon a rock.

He lay back in his chair, exhausted but upheld. He lay resting, waiting, before he again interpreted, with effort, with agony, to mankind. He lay very high, on the back of the world. The earth thrilled beneath him. Five floors grew through his flesh; their stiff leaves rustled by his head.

Music began clanging against the rocks up here. It is a motor horn down in the street, he muttered; but up here it cannoned from rock to rock, divided, met in shocks of sound which rose in smooth columns (that music should be visible was a discovery) and became an anthem, an anthem tuned

roXnd noZ by a shepherd boy's piping (That's an old man playing a penny Zhistle by the pXblic-hoXse, he mXttered) Zhich, as the boy stood still came bXbbling from his pipe, and then, as he climbed higher, made its

e[TXisite plaint Zhile the traffic passed beneath. This boy's elegy is played among the traffic, thoXght 6eptimXs. 1oZ he ZithdraZs Xp into the snoZs, and roses hang aboXt him—the thick red roses Zhich groZ on my bedroom Zall, he reminded himself. The mXsic stopped. He has his penny, he reasoned it oXt, and has gone on to the ne[t pXblic-hoXse.

BXt he himself remained high on his rock, like a droZned sailor on a rock. I leant oYer the edge of the boat and fell doZn, he thoXght. I Zent Xnder the sea. I haYe been dead, and yet am noZ aliYe, bXt let me rest still; he begged (he Zas talking to himself again—it Zas aZfXI, aZfXI!); and as, before Zaking, the Yoices of birds and the soXnd of Zheels chime and chatter in a TXeer harmony, groZ loXder and loXder and the sleeper feels himself draZing to the shores of life, so he felt himself draZing toZards life, the sXn groZing hotter, cries soXnding loXder, something tremendoXs aboXt to happen.

He had only to open his eyes; but a Zeight Zas on them; a fear. He strained; he pXshed; he looked; he saZ 5egent's Park before him. /ong streamers of sXnlight faZned at his feet. The trees ZaYed, brandished. :e Zelcome, the Zorld seemed to say; Ze accept; Ze create. BeaXty, the Zorld

seemed to say. And as if to proYe it (scientifically) ZhereYer he looked at the hoXses, at the railings, at the antelopes stretching oYer the palings, beaXty sprang instantly. To Zatch a leaf TXiYering in the rXsh of air Zas an e[TXisite joy. 8p in the sky sZalloZs sZooping, sZerYing, flinging themselYes in and oXt, roXnd and roXnd, yet alZays Zith perfect control as if elastics held them; and the flies rising and falling; and the sXn spotting noZ this leaf, noZ that, in mockery, da]]ling it Zith soft gold in pXre good temper; and noZ and again some chime (it might be a motor horn) tinkling diYinely on the grass stalks—all of this, calm and reasonable as it Zas, made oXt of ordinary things as it Zas, Zas the trXth noZ; beaXty, that Zas the trXth noZ. BeaXty Zas eYeryZhere.

"It is time," said 5e]ia.

The Zord "time" split its hXsk; poXred its riches oYer him; and from his lips fell like shells, like shaYings from a plane, ZithoXt his making them, hard, Zhite, imperishable Zords, and fleZ to attach themselYes to their places in an ode to Time; an immortal ode to Time. He sang. EYans ansZered from behind the tree. The dead Zere in Thessaly, EYans sang, among the orchids. There they Zaited till the :ar Zas oYer, and noZ the dead, noZ EYans himself—

"For God's sake don't come!" 6eptimXs cried oXt. For he coXld not look

Xpon the dead.

BXt the branches parted. A man in grey Zas actXally Zalking toZards them. It Zas EYans! BXt no mXd Zas on him; no ZoXnds; he Zas not changed. I mXst tell the Zhole Zorld, 6eptimXs cried, raising his hand (as the dead man in the grey sXit came nearer), raising his hand like some colossal figXre Zho has lamented the fate of man for ages in the desert alone Zith his hands pressed to his forehead, fXrroZs of despair on his cheeks, and noZ sees light on the desert's edge Zhich broadens and strikes the iron-black

figXre (and 6eptimXs half rose from his chair), and Zith legions of men prostrate behind him he, the giant moXrner, receiYes for one moment on his face the Zhole—

"BXt I am so Xnhappy, 6eptimXs," said 5e]ia trying to make him sit doZn.

The millions lamented; for ages they had sorroZed. He ZoXld tXrn roXnd, he ZoXld tell them in a feZ moments, only a feZ moments more, of this relief, of this joy, of this astonishing reYelation—

"The time, 6eptimXs," 5e]ia repeated. ":hat is the time?"

He Zas talking, he Zas starting, this man mXst notice him. He Zas looking at them.

"I will tell you the time," said Septimus, very slowly, very dreamily, smiling mysteriously. As he sat smiling at the dead man in the grey suit the taxi started—the taxi to the gate.

And that is being young, Peter thought as he passed them. To be having an awful scene—the poor girl looked absolutely desperate—in the middle of the morning. But that was it about, he wondered, that had the young man in the overcoat been saying to her to make her look like that; that awful fact had they got themselves into, both to look so desperate as that on a fine summer morning? The amazing thing about coming back to England, after five years, was the way it made, anyhow the first days, things stand out as if one had never seen them before; lovers strolling under a tree; the domestic family life of the parks. Never had he seen

London look so enchanting—the softness of the distances; the richness; the greenness; the civilisation, after India, he thought, strolling across the grass.

This susceptibility to impressions had been his doing no doubt. Until at his age he had, like a boy or a girl even, these alternations of mood; good days, bad days, for no reason whatsoever, happiness from a pretty face, downright misery at the sight of a friend. After India of course one fell in love with every woman one met. There was a freshness about them; even the poorest dressed better than fifty years ago surely; and to his eye the fashions had never been so becoming; the long black cloaks; the slimness; the elegance; and then the delicious and apparently universal habit of paint. Every woman, even the most respectable, had roses blooming under glass; lips coated with a knife; curls of Indian ink; there was design, art, everywhere; a change of some sort had undoubtedly taken place. What did the young people think about? Peter almost asked himself.

Those fifty years—1918 to 192—had been, he suspected, somehow very important. People looked different. Newspapers seemed different. For instance there was a man writing openly in one of the respectable weeklies about water-closets. That you couldn't have done ten years ago—written openly about water-closets in a respectable weekly. And then this taking out a stick of rouge, or a powder-puff and making up in public.

On board ship coming home there were lots of young men and girls— Betty and Bertie he remembered in particular—carrying on openly; the old mother sitting and watching them with her

knitting, cool as a cucumber. The girl would stand still and powder her nose in front of every one. And they weren't engaged; just having a good time; no feelings hurt on either side. As hard as nails she was—Betty—that's her name—; but a thorough good sort. She would make a very good wife at thirty—she

would marry when it suited her to marry; marry some rich man and live in a large house near Manchester.

How was it now when he had done that? Peter also asked himself, turning into the Broad walk,—married a rich man and lived in a large house near

Manchester? Somebody who had written him a long, glowing letter lately about "blue hydrangeas." It was seeing blue hydrangeas that made her think of him and the old days—bally beton, of course! It was bally

beton—the last person in the world one would have expected to marry a rich man and live in a large house near Manchester, the child, the daring, the romantic bally!



But of all that ancient lot, Clarissa's friends—:hitbreads, .inderleys, CXnninghams, .inloch--ones's—6ally Zas probably the best. 6he tried to get hold of things by the right end anyhoZ. 6he saZ throXgh HXgh

:hitbread anyhoZ—the admirable HXgh—Zhen Clarissa and the rest

Zere at his feet.

"The :hitbreads?" he coXld hear her saying. ":ho are the :hitbreads? Coal merchants. 5espectable tradespeople."

HXgh she detested for some reason. He thoXght of nothing bXt his oZn appearance, she said. He oXght to haYe been a DXke. He ZoXld be certain to marry one of the 5oyal Princesses. And of coXrse HXgh had the most e[traordinary, the most natXral, the most sXblime respect for the British

aristocracy of any hXman being he had eYer come across. EYen Clarissa had to oZn that. 2h, bXt he Zas sXch a dear, so Xnselfish, gaYe Xp shooting to please his old mother—remembered his aXnts' birthdays, and so on.

6ally, to do her jXstice, saZ throXgh all that. 2ne of the things he remembered best Zas an argXment one 6Xnday morning at BoXrton aboXt Zomen's rights (that antedilXYian topic), Zhen 6ally sXddenly lost her temper, flared Xp, and told HXgh that he represented all that Zas most detestable in British middle-class life. 6he told him that she considered him responsible for the state of "those poor girls in Piccadilly"—HXgh, the perfect gentleman, poor HXgh!—neYer did a man look more horrified! 6he did it on pXrpose she said afterZards (for they Xsed to get together in the Yegetable garden and compare notes). "He's read nothing, thoXght nothing, felt nothing," he coXld hear her saying in that Yery emphatic Yoice Zhich carried so mXch farther than she kneZ. The stable boys had more life in them than HXgh, she said. He Zas a perfect specimen of the pXblic school type, she said. 1o coXntry bXt England coXld haYe prodXced him. 6he Zas really spitefXl, for some reason; had some grXdge against him. 6omething had happened—he forgot Zhat—in the smoking-room. He had insXlted her

—kissed her? Incredible! 1obody belieYed a Zord against HXgh of coXrse.

:ho coXld? .issing 6ally in the smoking-room! If it had been some HonoXrable Edith or /ady Violet, perhaps; bXt not that ragamXffin 6ally ZithoXt a penny to her name, and a father or a mother gambling at 0onte Carlo. For of all the people he had eYer met

HXgh Zas the greatest snob— the most obseTXioXs—no, he didn't cringe e[actly. He Zas too mXch of a prig for that. A first-rate Yalet Zas the obYioXs comparison—somebody Zho Zalked behind carrying sXit cases; coXld be trXsted to send telegrams —indispensable to hostesses. And he'd foXnd his job—married his HonoXrable EYelyn; got some little post at CoXrt, looked after the .ing's cellars, polished the Imperial shoe-bXckles, Zent aboXt in knee-breeches and lace rXffles. HoZ remorseless life is! A little job at CoXrt!

He had married this lady, the HonoXrable EYelyn, and they liYed hereaboXts, so he thoXght (looking at the pompoXs hoXses oYerlooking the Park), for he had lXnched there once in a hoXse Zhich had, like all HXgh's possessions, something that no other hoXse coXld possibly haYe—linen cXpboards it might haYe been. YoX had to go and look at them—yoX had to

spend a great deal of time alZays admiring ZhateYer it Zas—linen cXpboards, pilloZ-cases, old oak fXrnitXre, pictXres, Zhich HXgh had picked Xp for an old song. BXt Ors. HXgh sometimes gaYe the shoZ aZay.

6he Zas one of those obscXre moXse-like little Zomen Zho admire big men. 6he Zas almost negligible. Then sXddenly she ZoXld say

something quite unexpected—something sharp. He had the relics of the grand manner perhaps. The steam coal was a little too strong for her—it made the atmosphere thick. And so there they lay, with their linen carpets and their old masters and their pillow-cases fringed with real lace at the rate of fifty or ten thousand a year presumably, while he, who was twenty years older than Hsueh, cadged for a job.

At fifty-three he had to come and ask them to put him into some secretary's office, to find him some Xue's job teaching little boys Latin,

at the beck and call of some mandarin in an office, something that brought in fifty hundred a year; for if he married Daisy, even with his pension, they could never do on less. What could he do it presumably; or Dallozay.

He didn't mind that he asked Dallozay. He was a thoroughly good sort; a bit limited; a bit thick in the head; yes; but a thoroughly good sort. What ever he took up he did in the same matter-of-fact sensible way; without a touch of imagination, without a spark of brilliancy, but with the impeccable niceness of his type. He ought to have been a country gentleman—he was wasted on politics. He

Zas at his best oXt of doors, Zith horses and dogs— hoZ good he Zas, for instance, Zhen that great shaggy dog of Clarissa's got caXght in a trap and had its paZ half torn off, and Clarissa tXrned faint and DalloZay did the Zhole thing; bandaged, made splints; told Clarissa not to be a fool. That Zas Zhat she liked him for perhaps—that Zas Zhat she needed. "1oZ, my dear, don't be a fool. Hold this—fetch that," all the time talking to the dog as if it Zere a hXman being.

BXt hoZ coXld she sZalloZ all that stXff aboXt poetry? HoZ coXld she let him hold forth aboXt 6hakespeare? 6erioXsly and solemnly 5ichard DalloZay got on his hind legs and said that no decent man oXght to read

6hakespeare's sonnets becaXse it Zas like listening at keyholes (besides

the relationship Zas not one that he approYed). 1o decent man oXght to let his Zife Yisit a deceased Zife's sister. Incredible! The only thing to do Zas to pelt him Zith sXgared almonds—it Zas at dinner. BXt Clarissa sXcked it

all in; thought it so honest of him; so independent of him; Heaven knows if she didn't think him the most original mind she'd ever met!

That was one of the bonds between Fanny and himself. There was a garden where they used to walk, a walled-in place, with roses and giant carnations—he could remember Fanny tearing off a rose, stopping to exclaim at the beauty of the cabbage leaves in the moonlight (it was extraordinary how vividly it all came back to him, things he hadn't thought of for years,) while she implored him, half laughing of course, to carry off Clarissa, to save her from the Hughs and the Daltons and all the other "perfect gentlemen" who would "stifle her soul" (she wrote reams of poetry in those days), make a mere hostess of her, encourage her worldliness. But one must do Clarissa justice. She wasn't going to marry Hugh anyhow. She had a perfectly clear notion of what she wanted. Her emotions were all on the surface. Beneath, she was very shrewd—a far better judge of character than Fanny, for instance, and with it all, purely feminine; with that extraordinary gift, that woman's gift, of making a world of her own wherever she happened to be. She came into a room; she stood, as he had often seen her, in a doorway with lots of people round her. But it was

Clarissa one remembered. Not that she was striking; not beautiful at all; there was nothing picturesque about her; she never said anything specially clever; there she was, however; there she was.

So, no, no! He was not in love with her any more! He only felt, after seeing her that morning, among her scissors and silks, making ready for the party, unable to get away from the thought of her; she kept coming back and back like a sleeper jolting against him in a railway carriage; which was not being in love, of course; it was thinking of her, criticising her, starting again, after thirty years, trying to explain her. The obvious thing to say of her was that she was worldly; cared too much for rank and society and getting on in the world—which was true in a sense; she had admitted it to him. (You could always get her to own up if you took the trouble; she was honest.) That she would say was that she hated fops, fogies, failures, like himself presumably; thought people had no right to sloth about with their hands in their pockets; must do something, be something; and these great shells, these dishes, these hoary old Countesses one met in her drawing-room, unspeakably remote as he felt

them to be from anything that mattered a straw, stood for something real to her. /ady Be[borough, she said once, held

herself upright (so did Clarissa herself; she never loathed in any sense of the word; she was straight as a dart, a little rigid in fact). He said they had a kind of courage which the older she grew the more she respected. In all this there was a great deal of Dallozay, of course; a great deal of the public-spirited, British Empire, tariff-reform, governing-class spirit, which had grown on her, as it tends to do. With time his fits, she had to see things through his eyes—one of the tragedies of married life. With a mind of her own, she must always be talking Richard—as if one couldn't know to a tittle what

Richard thought by reading the Morning Post of a morning! These parties for example were all for him, or for her idea of him (to do Richard justice he would have been happier farming in Norfolk). He made her drawing-room a sort of meeting-place; she had a genius for it. Every now and then again he had seen her take some ray of truth, twist him, turn him, take him up;

set him going. Infinite numbers of dull people congregated round her of course. But odd unexpected people turned up; an artist sometimes; sometimes a writer; these were fish in that atmosphere. And behind it all was that network of visiting, leaving cards, being kind to people; running about with bunches of flowers, little presents; her going to France— must have been an air-cushion; a real drain on her strength; all that



interminable traffic that Zomen of her sort keep Xp; bXt she did it genXinely, from a natXral instinct.

2ddly enoXgh, she Zas one of the most thoroXghgoing sceptics he had eYer met, and possibly (this Zas a theory he Xsed to make Xp to accoXnt for her, so transparent in some Zays, so inscrXtable in others), possibly she said to herself, As Ze are a doomed race, chained to a sinking ship (her faYoXrite reading as a girl Zas HX[ley and Tyndall, and they Zere fond of these naXtical metaphors), as the Zhole thing is a bad joke, let Xs, at any rate, do oXr part; mitigate the sXfferings of oXr felloZ-prisoners (HX[ley again); decorate the dXngeon Zith floZers and air-cXshions; be as decent as Ze possibly can. Those rXffians, the Gods, shan't haYe it all their oZn Zay,— her notion being that the Gods, Zho neYer lost a chance of hXrting, thZarting and spoiling hXman liYes Zere serioXsly pXt oXt if, all the same, yoX behaYed like a lady. That phase came directly after 6ylyia's death— that horrible affair. To see yoXr oZn sister killed by a falling tree (all

-Xstin Parry's faXlt—all his carelessness) before yoXr Yery eyes, a girl too on the Yerge of life, the most gifted of them, Clarissa alZays said, Zas enoXgh to tXrn one bitter. /ater she Zasn't so positiYe perhaps; she thoXght there Zere no Gods; no one Zas to

blame; and so she eYolYed this atheist's religion of doing good for the sake of goodness.

And of coXrse she enjoyed life immensely. It Zas her natXre to enjoy (thoXgh goodness only knoZs, she had her reserYes; it Zas a mere sketch, he often felt, that eYen he, after all these years, coXld make of Clarissa). AnyhoZ there Zas no bitterness in her; none of that sense of moral YirtXe Zhich is so repXlsiYe in good Zomen. 6he enjoyed practically eYerything. If yoX Zalked Zith her in Hyde Park noZ it Zas a bed of tXlips, noZ a child in a perambXlator, noZ some absXrd little drama she made Xp on the spXr of the moment. (Very likely, she ZoXld haYe talked to those loYers, if

she had thoXght them Xnhappy.) 6he had a sense of comedy that Zas really e[TXisite, bXt she needed people, alZays people, to bring it oXt, Zith the ineYitable resXlt that she frittered her time aZay, lXnching, dining, giYing these incessant parties of hers, talking nonsense, sayings things she didn't mean, blXnting the edge of her mind, losing her discrimination. There she ZoXld sit at the head of the table taking infinite pains Zith some old bXffer Zho might be XsefXI to DalloZay—they kneZ the most appalling bores in EXrope—or in came Eli]abeth and eYerything mXst giYe Zay to her. 6he Zas at a High 6chool, at the inarticXlate stage last

time he was over, a round-eyed, pale-faced girl, with nothing of her mother in her, a silent stolid creature, who took it all as a matter of course, let her mother make a fuss of her, and then said "Oay I go no?" like a child of four; going off, Clarissa explained, with that mixture of amusement and pride which Dallozay himself seemed to possess in her, to play hockey. And now Elizabeth was "out," presumably; thought him an old fogey, laughed at her mother's friends. Ah well, so be it. The compensation of growing old,

Peter Walsh thought, coming out of Segent's Park, and holding his hat in hand, was simply this; that the passions remain as strong as ever, but one has gained—at last!—the power which adds the supreme flavour to existence,—the power of taking hold of experience, of turning it round, slowly, in the light.

A terrible confession it was (he put his hat on again), but now, at the age of fifty-three one scarcely needed people any more. /ife itself, every moment of it, every drop of it, here, this instant, now, in the sun, in Segent's Park, was enough. Too much indeed. A whole lifetime was too short to bring out, now that one had acquired the power, the full flavour; to extract every ounce of pleasure, every shade of meaning; which both were so much

more solid than they used to be, so much less personal. It was impossible that he should ever suffer again as Clarissa had made him suffer. For hours at a time (pray God that one might say these

things ZithoXt being oYerheard!), for hoXrs and days he neYer thoXght of Daisy.

CoXld it be that he Zas in loYe Zith her then, remembering the misery, the tortXre, the e[traordinary passion of those days? It Zas a different thing altogether—a mXch pleasanter thing—the trXth being, of coXrse, that noZ she Zas in loYe Zith him. And that perhaps Zas the reason Zhy, Zhen the ship actXally sailed, he felt an e[traordinary relief, Zanted nothing so mXch as to be alone; Zas annoyed to find all her little attentions—cigars, notes, a rXg for the Yoyage—in his cabin. EYery one if they Zere honest ZoXld say the same; one doesn't Zant people after fifty; one doesn't Zant to go on telling Zomen they are pretty; that's Zhat most men of fifty ZoXld say, Peter :alsh thoXght, if they Zere honest.

BXt then these astonishing accesses of emotion—bXrsting into tears this morning, Zhat Zas all that aboXt? :hat coXld Clarissa haYe thoXght of him? thoXght him a fool presXmably, not for the first time. It Zas jealoXsy that Zas at the bottom of it—jealoXsy Zhich sXrYiYes eYery other passion of mankind, Peter :alsh thoXght, holding his pocket-knife at arm's length.

6he had been meeting Oajor 2rde, Daisy said in her last letter; said it on pXrpose he kneZ; said it to make him jealoXs; he coXld see her Zrinkling her forehead as she Zrote, Zondering Zhat she coXld say to hXrt him; and yet it made no difference; he Zas fXrioXs! All this pother of coming to England and seeing laZyers Zasn't to marry her, bXt to preYent her from marrying anybody else. That Zas Zhat tortXred him, that Zas Zhat came oYer him Zhen he saZ Clarissa so calm, so cold, so intent on her dress or ZhateYer it Zas; realising Zhat she might haYe spared him, Zhat she had redXced him to—a Zhimpering, sniYelling old ass. BXt Zomen, he thoXght, shXtting his pocket-knife, don't knoZ Zhat passion is. They don't knoZ the

meaning of it to men. Clarissa Zas as cold as an icicle. There she ZoXld sit on the sofa by his side, let him take her hand, giYe him one kiss—Here he Zas at the crossing.

A soXnd interrXpted him; a frail TXiYering soXnd, a Yoice bXbbling Xp ZithoXt direction, YigoXr, beginning or end, rXnning Zeakly and shrilly and Zith an absence of all hXman meaning into

ee Xm fah Xm so

foo sZee too eem oo—

the Yoice of no age or se[, the Yoice of an ancient spring spoXting  
from the earth; Zhich issXed, jXst opposite 5egent's Park TXbe  
station from a tall TXiYering shape, like a fXnnel, like a rXsty  
pXmp, like a Zind-beaten tree for eYer barren of leaYes Zhich lets  
the Zind rXn Xp and doZn its branches singing

ee Xm fah Xm so

foo sZee too eem oo

and rocks and creaks and moans in the eternal bree]e.

ThroXgh all ages—Zhen the paYement Zas grass, Zhen it Zas  
sZamp, throXgh the age of tXsk and mammoth, throXgh the age  
of silent sXnrise, the battered Zoman—for she Zore a skirt—Zith  
her right hand e[posed, her left clXtching at her side, stood singing  
of loYe—loYe Zhich has lasted a million years, she sang, loYe Zhich  
preYails, and millions of years ago, her loYer, Zho had been dead  
these centXries, had Zalked, she crooned, Zith her in Oay; bXt in  
the coXrse of ages, long as sXmmer days, and

flaming, she remembered, Zith nothing bXt red asters, he had  
gone; death's enormoXs sickle had sZept those tremendoXs hills,  
and Zhen at last she

laid her hoary and immensely aged head on the earth, noZ  
become a mere cinder of ice, she implored the Gods to lay by her  
side a bXnch of pXrple- heather, there on her high bXrial place  
Zhich the last rays of the last sXn caressed; for then the pageant  
of the XniYerse ZoXld be oYer.

As the ancient song bXbbled Xp opposite 5egent's Park TXbe  
station still the earth seemed green and floZery; still, thoXgh it  
issXed from so rXde a moXth, a mere hole in the earth, mXddy too,  
matted Zith root fibres and tangled grasses, still the old bXbbling  
bXrbling song, soaking throXgh the knotted roots of infinite ages,

and skeletons and treasures, streamed away in rivulets over the pavement and all along the Oarylebone Road, and down to Zards EXston, fertilising, leaving a damp stain.

But remembering how once in some primeval Day she had talked with her lover, this rusty pump, this battered old Roman with one hand exposed for coppers the other clenching her side, would still be there in ten million years, remembering how once she had talked in Day, where the sea flows now, with whom it did not matter—he was a man, oh yes, a man whom she had loved her. But the passage of ages had blurred the clarity of that ancient

Day day; the bright petalled flowers were hoar and silver frosted; and she no longer saw, when she implored him (as she did not quite clearly) "look in my eyes with thy steady eyes intently," she no longer saw brown eyes, black whiskers or sunburnt face but only a looming shape, a shadow shape, to which, with the bird-like freshness of the very aged she still twittered "give me your hand and let me press it gently" (Peter Walsh couldn't help giving the poor creature a coin as he stepped into his taxi), "and if some one should see, what matter they?" she demanded; and her fist clenched at her side, and she smiled, pocketing her shilling, and all peering inquisitive eyes seemed blotted out, and the passing generations—the pavement was crowded with bustling middle-



class people—Yanished, like leaYes, to be trodden Xnder, to be soaked and steeped and made moXld of by that eternal spring—

ee Xm fah Xm so

foo sZee too eem oo

"Poor old Zoman," said 5e]ia :arren 6mith, Zaiting to cross.

2h poor old Zretch!

6Xppose it Zas a Zet night? 6Xppose one's father, or somebody Zho had knoZn one in better days had happened to pass, and saZ one standing there in the gXtter? And Zhere did she sleep at night?

CheerfXlly, almost gaily, the inYincible thread of soXnd ZoXnd Xp into the air like the smoke from a cottage chimney, Zinding Xp clean beech trees and issXing in a tXft of blXe smoke among the topmost leaYes. "And if some one shoXld see, Zhat matter they?"

Since she was so unhappy, for weeks and weeks no, she had given meanings to things that happened, almost felt sometimes that she must stop people in the street, if they looked good, kind people, just to say to them "I am unhappy"; and this old woman singing in the street "if some one should see, what matter they?" made her suddenly think sure that everything was going to be right. They were going to Sir William Bradshaw; she thought his name sounded nice; he would care for her at once. And then there was a brewer's cart, and the grey horses had upright bristles of straw in their tails; there were newspaper placards. It was a silly, silly dream, being unhappy.

So they crossed, Mr. and Mrs. Septimus Warren Smith, and was there, after all, anything to draw attention to them, anything to make a passer-by suspect here is a young man who carries in him the greatest message in the world, and is, moreover, the happiest man in the world, and the most miserable? Perhaps they walked more slowly than other people, and there was something hesitating, trailing, in the man's walk, but that more

natural for a clerk, who has not been in the West End on a weekday at this hour for years, than to keep looking at the sky, looking at this, that and the other, as if Portland Place were a room he had

come into Zhen the family are aZay, the chandeliers being hXng in holland bags, and the caretaker, as she lets in long shafts of dXsty light Xpon deserted, TXeer-looking armchairs, lifting one corner of the long blinds, e[plains to the Yisitors Zhat a ZonderfXI place it is; hoZ ZonderfXI, bXt at the same time, he thinks, as he looks at chairs and tables, hoZ strange.

To look at, he might haYe been a clerk, bXt of the better sort; for he Zore broZn boots; his hands Zere edXcated; so, too, his profile—his angXlar,

big-nosed, intelligent, sensitiYe profile; bXt not his lips altogether, for they Zere loose; and his eyes (as eyes tend to be), eyes merely; ha]el, large; so that he Zas, on the Zhole, a border case, neither one thing nor the other, might end Zith a hoXse at PXrley and a motor car, or continXe renting apartments in back streets all his life; one of those half-edXcated, self- edXcated men Zhose edXcation is all learnt from books borroZed from pXblic libraries, read in the eYening after the day's Zork, on the adYice of Zell-knoZn aXthors consXlted by letter.

As for the other e[periences, the solitary ones, Zhich people go throXgh alone, in their bedrooms, in their offices, Zalking the fields

and the streets of London, he had them; had left home, a mere boy, because of his mother; she lied; because he came down to tea for the fiftieth time with his hands washed; because he could see no future for a poet in London; and so, making a confidant of his little sister, had gone to London leaving an abscond note behind him, such as great men have written, and the world has read later when the story of their struggles has become famous.

London has swallowed up many millions of young men called Smith; thought nothing of fantastic Christian names like Septimus with which their parents have thought to distinguish them. Lodging off the Exton

road, there were experiences, again experiences, such as change a face in two years from a pink innocent oval to a face lean, contracted, hostile. But of all this that could the most observant of friends have said except that

a gardener says when he opens the conservatory door in the morning and finds a new blossom on his plant:—It has flowered; flowered from vanity, ambition, idealism, passion, loneliness, courage, laziness, the sexual seeds, which all muddled up (in a room off the Exton road), made him shy, and stammering, made

him an[ioXs to improYe himself, made him fall in loYe Zith Oiss Isabel Pole, lectXring in the :aterloo 5oad Xpon 6hakespeare.

:as he not like .eats? she asked; and reflected hoZ she might giYe him a taste of Antony and Cleopatra and the rest; lent him books; Zrote him scraps of letters; and lit in him sXch a fire as bXrns only once in a lifetime, ZithoXt heat, flickering a red gold flame infinitely ethereal and insXbstantial oYer Oiss Pole; Antony and Cleopatra; and the :aterloo

5oad. He thoXght her beaXtifXl, belieYed her impeccably Zise; dreamed of her, Zrote poems to her, Zhich, ignoring the sXbject, she corrected in red ink; he saZ her, one sXmmer eYening, Zalking in a green dress in a sTXare. "It has floZered," the gardener might haYe said, had he opened the door; had he come in, that is to say, any night aboXt this time, and foXnd him Zriting; foXnd him tearing Xp his Zriting; foXnd him finishing a masterpiece at three o'clock in the morning and rXnning oXt to pace the streets, and Yisiting chXrches, and fasting one day, drinking another, deYoXring 6hakespeare, DarZin, The History of Civilisation, and Bernard

6haZ.

6omething Zas Xp, Or. BreZer kneZ; Or. BreZer, managing clerk at

bibleys and ArroZsmiths, aXctioneers, YalXers, land and estate agents; something Zas Xp, he thoXght, and, being paternal Zith his yoXng men, and thinking Yery highly of 6mith's abilities, and prophesying that he

ZoXld, in ten or fifteen years, sXceed to the leather arm-chair in the inner room Xnder the skylight Zith the deed-bo[es roXnd him, "if he keeps his health," said Or. BreZer, and that Zas the danger—he looked Zeakly; adYised football, inYited him to sXpper and Zas seeing his Zay to consider recommending a rise of salary, Zhen something happened Zhich threZ oXt many of Or. BreZer's calcXlations, took aZay his ablest yoXng felloZs,

and eYentXally, so prying and insidioXs Zere the fingers of the EXropean

:ar, smashed a plaster cast of Ceres, ploXghed a hole in the geraniXm beds, and Xtterly rXined the cook's nerYes at Or. BreZer's establishment at

OXsZell Hill.

6eptimXs Zas one of the first to YolXnteer. He Zent to France to saYe an England Zhich consisted almost entirely of 6hakespeare's plays and Oiss Isabel Pole in a green dress Zalking in a sTXare.

There in the trenches the change which Or. BreZer desired Zhen he advised football Zao proceeded instantly; he developed manliness; he Zao promoted; he drew the attention, indeed the affection of his officer, EYans by name. It Zao a case

of two dogs playing on a hearth-rug; one worrying a paper screw, snarling, snapping, giving a pinch, now and then, at the old dog's ear; the other lying somnolent, blinking at the fire, raising a paw, turning and growling good-temperedly. They had to be together, share with each other, fight with each other, quarrel with each other. But Zhen EYans (5e]ia Zho had only seen him once called him "a quiet man," a sturdy red-haired man, Xndemonstrative in the company of Zomen), Zhen EYans Zao killed, just before the Armistice, in Italy, without showing any emotion or recognising that here Zao the end of a friendship, congratulated himself upon feeling very little and very reasonably. The war had taught him. It

Zao sublime. He had gone through the whole show, friendship, European

war, death, had won promotion, Zao still under thirty and Zao bound to survive. He Zao right there. The last shells missed him. He watched them explode with indifference. When peace came he Zao in Orlan, billeted in the house of an innkeeper with a courtyard, floors in boxes, little tables in the open, daughters making hats,

and to /Xcre]ia, the yoXnger daXghter, he became engaged one eYening Zhen the panic Zas on him—that he coXld not feel.

For noZ that it Zas all oYer, trXce signed, and the dead bXried, he had, especially in the eYening, these sXdden thXnder-claps of fear. He coXld not feel. As he opened the door of the room Zhere the Italian girls sat making hats, he coXld see them; coXld hear them; they Zere rXbbing Zires among coloXred beads in saXcers; they Zere tXrning bXckram shapes this Zay and that; the table Zas all streZn Zith feathers, spangles, silks, ribbons; scissors Zere rapping on the table; bXt something failed him; he coXld not feel. 6till, scissors rapping, girls laXghing, hats being made protected him; he Zas assXred of safety; he had a refXge. BXt he coXld not sit there all night. There Zere moments of Zaking in the early morning. The bed Zas falling; he Zas falling. 2h for the scissors and the lamplight and the bXckram shapes! He asked /Xcre]ia to marry him, the yoXnger of the tZo, the gay, the friYoloXs, Zith those little artist's fingers that she ZoXld hold Xp and say "It is all in them." 6ilk, feathers, Zhat not Zere aliYe to them.



"It is the hat that matters most," she would say, when they walked  
out together. Every hat that passed, she would examine; and the  
cloak and the dress and the way the woman held herself. Ill-  
dressing, over-dressing she

stigmatised, not sagely, rather with impatient movements of  
the hands, like those of a painter who parts from him some obnoxious  
well-meant glaring imposture; and then, generously, but always  
critically, she would welcome a shopgirl who had turned her little  
bit of stuff gallantly, or praise, wholly, with enthusiastic and  
professional understanding, a French lady descending from her  
carriage, in chinchilla, robes, pearls.

"Beautiful!" she would murmur, nodding deprecatingly, that he might  
see. But beauty was behind a pane of glass. Even taste (she  
liked ices,

chocolates, sweet things) had no relish to him. He put down his cup  
on the little marble table. He looked at people outside; happy they  
seemed, collecting in the middle of the street, shouting, laughing,  
stammering over nothing. But he could not taste, he could not feel.  
In the tea-shop among the tables and the chattering waiters the  
appalling fear came over him—he could not feel. He could reason;  
he could read, Dante for example, quite easily ("deprecatingly, do put

doZn yoXr book," said 5e]ia, gently shXtting the Inferno), he coXld add Xp his bill; his brain Zas perfect; it mXst be the faXlt of the Zorld then—that he coXld not feel.

"The English are so silent," 5e]ia said. 6he liked it, she said. 6he respected these Englishmen, and Zanted to see /ondon, and the English horses, and the tailor-made sXits, and coXld remember hearing hoZ ZonderfXl the shops Zere, from an AXnt Zho had married and liYed in 6oho.

It might be possible, 6eptimXs thoXght, looking at England from the train ZindoZ, as they left 1eZhaYen; it might be possible that the Zorld itself is ZithoXt meaning.

At the office they adYanced him to a post of considerable responsibility. They Zere proXd of him; he had Zon crosses. "YoX haYe done yoXr dXty; it is Xp to Xs—" began Or. BreZer; and coXld

not finish, so pleasurable was his emotion. They took admirable lodgings off the Tottenham Court Road.

Here he opened Shakespeare once more. That boy's business of the intoxication of language—Antony and Cleopatra—had shrieked bitterly. How Shakespeare loathed humanity—the putting on of clothes, the getting of children, the sordidity of the mouth and the belly! This was no

revelation to Septimus; the message hidden in the beauty of Zerkow. The secret signal which one generation passes, under disguise, to the next is loathing, hatred, despair. Dante the same. Aeschylus (translated) the same. There Sylvia sat at the table trimming hats. She trimmed hats for Mrs. Filmer's friends; she trimmed hats by the hour. She looked pale, mysterious, like a lily, drooping, under Zerkow, he thought.

"The English are so serious," she would say, putting her arms round

Septimus, her cheek against his.

/oYe betZeen man and Zoman Zas repXlsiYe to 6hakespeare. The bXsiness of copXlation Zas filth to him before the end. BXt, 5eJia said, she mXst haYe children. They had been married fiYe years.

They Zent to the ToZer together; to the Victoria and Albert OXseXm; stood in the croZd to see the .ing open Parliament. And there Zere the shops—hat shops, dress shops, shops Zith leather bags in the ZindoZ, Zhere she ZoXld stand staring. BXt she mXst haYe a boy.

6he mXst haYe a son like 6eptimXs, she said. BXt nobody coXld be like

6eptimXs; so gentle; so serioXs; so cleYer. CoXld she not read 6hakespeare too? :as 6hakespeare a difficXlt aXthor? she asked.

2ne cannot bring children into a Zorld like this. 2ne cannot perpetXate sXffering, or increase the breed of these IXstfXI animals, Zho haYe no lasting emotions, bXt only Zhims and Yanities, eddyng them noZ this Zay, noZ that.

He watched her snip, shape, as one watches a bird hop, flit in the grass, without daring to move a finger. For the truth is (let her ignore it) that human beings have neither kindness, nor faith, nor charity beyond what serves to increase the pleasure of the moment. They hunt in packs. Their packs scour the desert and vanish screaming into the wilderness. They desert the fallen. They are plastered over with grimaces. There was Brecher at the office, with his waxed moustache, coral tie-pin, white slip, and pleasurable emotions—all coldness and clamminess within,—his geraniums ruined in the war—his cook's nerves destroyed; or Amelia

that's her name, handing round cups of tea punctually at five—a leering,

sneering obscene little harpy; and the Toms and Berties in their starched shirt fronts oozing thick drops of vice. They never saw him drawing pictures of them naked at their antics in his notebook. In the street, vans roared past him; brutality blared out on placards; men were trapped in mines; women burnt alive; and once a maimed file of lunatics being exercised or displayed for the diversion of the populace (who laughed aloud), ambled and nodded and grinned past him, in the Tottenham Court

Soad, each half apologetically, yet triumphantly, inflicting his  
hopeless

Zoe. And would he go mad?

At tea Sylvia told him that Mrs. Filmer's daughter was expecting a  
baby. She could not grow old and have no children! She was very  
lonely, she was very unhappy! She cried for the first time since  
they were married. For a day he heard her sobbing; he heard it  
accidentally, he noticed it distinctly; he compared it to a piston  
thumping. But he felt nothing.

His wife was crying, and he felt nothing; only each time she sobbed  
in this profound, this silent, this hopeless way, he descended  
another step into the pit.

At last, with a melodramatic gesture which he assumed  
mechanically and with complete consciousness of its insincerity, he  
dropped his head on his hands. Now he had surrendered; no other  
people must help him. People must be sent for. He gave in.

Nothing could rouse him. She put him to bed. She sent for a doctor—

Mrs. Filmer's Dr. Holmes. Dr. Holmes examined him. There was nothing to be done, said Dr. Holmes. Ah, that a relief! That a kind man, that a good man! thought she. When he felt like that he went to the

Oxley Hall, said Dr. Holmes. He took a day off with his wife and played golf. Why not try two tablets of bromide dissolved in a glass of water at bedtime? These old Bloomsbury houses, said Dr. Holmes, tapping the wall, are often full of very fine panelling, which the landlords have the folly to paper over. Only the other day, visiting a patient, I saw somebody doing something in Bedford Square—

So there was no excuse; nothing to be done, except the sin for

which Heaven had condemned him to death; that he did not feel. He

had not cared Zhen EYans Zas killed; that Zas Zorst; bXt all the other crimes raised their heads and shook their fingers and jeered and sneered oYer the rail of the bed in the early hoXrs of the morning at the prostrate body Zhich lay realising its degradation; hoZ he had married his Zife ZithoXt loYing her; had lied to her; sedXced her; oXtraged Oiss Isabel Pole, and Zas so pocked and marked Zith Yice that Zomen shXddered Zhen they saZ him in the street. The Yerdict of hXman natXre on sXch a Zretch Zas death.

Dr. Holmes came again. /arge, fresh coloXred, handsome, flicking his boots, looking in the glass, he brXshed it all aside—headaches, sleeplessness, fears, dreams—nerYe symptoms and nothing more, he said. If Dr. Holmes foXnd himself eYen half a poXnd beloZ eleYen stone si[, he asked his Zife for another plate of porridge at breakfast. (5e]ia ZoXld learn to cook porridge.) BXt, he continXed, health is largely a matter in oXr oZn control. ThroZ yoXrself into oXtside interests; take Xp some hobby.

He opened 6hakespeare—Antony and Cleopatra; pXshed 6hakespeare aside. 6ome hobby, said Dr. Holmes, for did he not oZe his oZn e[cellent health (and he Zorked as hard as any man in /ondon) to the fact that he coXld alZays sZitch off from his



patients on to old fXrnitXre? And Zhat a Yery pretty comb, if he might say so, Ors. :arren 6mith Zas Zearing!

:hen the damned fool came again, 6eptimXs refXsed to see him. Did he indeed? said Dr. Holmes, smiling agreeably. 5eally he had to giYe that charming little lady, Ors. 6mith, a friendly pXsh before he coXld get past her into her hXsband's bedroom.

"6o yoX're in a fXnk," he said agreeably, sitting doZn by his patient's side. He had actXally talked of killing himself to his Zife, TXite a girl, a foreigner, Zasn't she? Didn't that giYe her a Yery odd idea of English hXsbands? Didn't one oZe perhaps a dXty to one's Zife? :oXldn't it be better to do something instead of lying in bed? For he had had forty years' e[perience behind him; and 6eptimXs coXld take Dr. Holmes's Zord for it

—there Zas nothing ZhateYer the matter Zith him. And ne[t time Dr. Holmes came he hoped to find 6mith oXt of bed and not making that charming little lady his Zife an[ioXs aboXt him.

HXman natXre, in short, Zas on him—the repXlsiYe brXte, Zith the blood- red nostrils. Holmes Zas on him. Dr. Holmes came TXite

regularly every day. Once you stumble, the note on the back of a postcard, the man's name is on you. Holmes is on you. Their only chance was to escape, without letting Holmes know; to Italy—anywhere, anywhere, away from Dr. Holmes.

But Eliza could not understand him. Dr. Holmes was such a kind man. He was so interested in the note. He only wanted to help them, he said. He had four little children and he had asked her to tea, she told the note.

So he was deserted. The whole world was clamoring: Kill yourself, kill yourself, for our sakes. But why should he kill himself for their sakes? Food was pleasant; the sun hot; and this killing oneself, how does one set about it, with a table knife, or a lily, with floods of blood,—by sucking a gaspipe? He was too weak; he could scarcely raise his hand. Besides, now that he was alone, condemned, deserted, as those who are about to die are alone, there was a luxury in it, an isolation full of splendor; a freedom which the attached can never know. Holmes had none of course; the brute with the red nostrils had none. But even Holmes himself could

not toXch this last relic straying on the edge of the Zorld, this  
oXtcast, Zho ga]ed back at the inhabited regions, Zho lay, like a  
droZned sailor, on the shore of the Zorld.

It Zas at that moment (5e]ia gone shopping) that the great  
reYelation took place. A Yoice spoke from behind the screen.  
EYans Zas speaking. The dead Zere Zith him.

"EYans, EYans!" he cried.

Or. 6mith Zas talking aloXd to himself, Agnes the serYant girl cried  
to

Ors. Filmer in the kitchen. "EYans, EYans," he had said as she  
broXght in the tray. 6he jXmped, she did. 6he scXttled doZnstairs.

And 5e]ia came in, Zith her floZers, and Zalked across the room, and pXt the roses in a Yase, Xpon Zhich the sXn strXck directly, and it Zent laXghing, leaping roXnd the room.

6he had had to bXy the roses, 5e]ia said, from a poor man in the street. BXt they Zere almost dead already, she said, arranging the roses.

6o there Zas a man oXtside; EYans presXmably; and the roses, Zhich 5e]ia said Zere half dead, had been picked by him in the fields of Greece. "CommXnication is health; commXnication is happiness, commXnication

—" he mXttered.

":hat are yoX saying, 6eptimXs?" 5e]ia asked, Zild Zith terror, for he

Zas talking to himself.

She sent Agnes running for Dr. Holmes. Her husband, she said, was mad. He scarcely knew her.

"You brute! You brute!" cried the patient, seeing the man that is Dr. Holmes, enter the room.

"Is that's all this about?" said Dr. Holmes in the most amiable way in the world. "Talking nonsense to frighten your wife?" But he would give him something to make him sleep. And if they were rich people, said Dr. Holmes, looking ironically round the room, by all means let them go to Harley Street; if they had no confidence in him, said Dr. Holmes, looking not quite so kind.

It was precisely twelve o'clock; twelve by Big Ben; whose stroke was lifted over the northern part of London; blended with that of other clocks, mixed in a thin ethereal way with the clouds and wisps of smoke, and died up there among the seagulls—twelve o'clock struck as Clarissa Dallorey laid her green dress on her bed, and the barren Smiths walked down Harley Street. Twelve was the hour

of their appointment. Probably, she thought, that was William Bradshaw's house with the grey motor car in front of it. The leaden circles dissolved in the air.

Indeed it was—William Bradshaw's motor car; the plain initials 'W.B.' interlocked on the panel, as if the pomps of heraldry were incongruous, this man being the ghostly helper, the priest of science; and, as the motor car was grey, so to match its sober severity, grey furs, silver grey rugs were heaped in it, to keep her ladyship warm while she

waited. For often William would travel sixty miles or more down into the country to visit the rich, the afflicted, who could afford the very large fee which William very properly charged for his advice. Her ladyship waited with the rugs about her knees and her or more, leaning back, thinking sometimes of the patient, sometimes, especially, of the fall of gold, mounting minute by minute while she waited; the fall of gold that was mounting between them and all shifts and anxieties (she had borne them bravely; they had had their struggles) until she felt wedged on a calm ocean, where only spice winds blow; respected, admired, envied, with scarcely anything left to wish for, though she

regretted her stoutness; large dinner-parties every Thursday night to the profession; an occasional

bar to be opened; loyalty greeted; too little time, alas, with her husband, whose work grew and grew; a boy doing well at Eton; she would have liked a daughter too; interests she had, however, in plenty; child welfare; the after-care of the epileptic, and photography, so that if there was a church building, or a church decaying, she bribed the sexton, got the key and took photographs, which were scarcely to be distinguished from the work of professionals, while she waited.

Dr. William himself was no longer young. He had worked very hard; he had won his position by sheer ability (being the son of a shopkeeper); loved his profession; made a fine figurehead at ceremonies and spoke well

—all of which had by the time he was knighted given him a heavy look, a weary look (the stream of patients being so incessant, the responsibilities and privileges of his profession so onerous), which weariness, together with his grey hairs, increased the extraordinary distinction of his presence and gave him the reputation (of the utmost importance in dealing with nervous cases) not merely of lightning skill, and almost infallible accuracy in diagnosis but of

sympathy; tact; Xnderstanding of the hXman soXI. He coXIld see the first moment they came into the room (the :arren 6miths they Zere called); he Zas certain directly he saZ the man; it Zas a case of

e[treme graYity. It Zas a case of complete breakdoZn—complete physical and nerYoXs breakdoZn, Zith eYery symptom in an adYanced stage, he ascertained in tZo or three minXtes (Zriting ansZers to TXestions, mXrmXred discreetly, on a pink card).

HoZ long had Dr. Holmes been attending him?

6i[ Zeeks.

Prescribed a little bromide? 6aid there Zas nothing the matter? Ah yes (those general practitioners! thoXght 6ir :illiam. It took half his time to Xndo their blXnders. 6ome Zere irreparable).

"YoX serYed Zith great distinction in the :ar?"



The patient repeated the word "Zar" interrogatively.

He was attaching meanings to words of a symbolical kind. A serious symptom, to be noted on the card.

"The 'ar?" the patient asked. The European 'ar—that little shindy of schoolboys with gXnpozder? Had he served with distinction? He really forgot. In the 'ar itself he had failed.

"Yes, he served with the greatest distinction," said the doctor; "he was promoted."

"And they have the very highest opinion of you at your office?" said William Maxwell, glancing at Dr. Brezer's very generously worded letter. "So that you have nothing to worry you, no financial anxiety, nothing?"

He had committed an appalling crime and been condemned to death by hXman natXre.

"I haYe—I haYe," he began, "committed a crime—"

"He has done nothing Zrong ZhateYer," 5e]ia assXred the doctor. If Or.

6mith ZoXld Zait, said 6ir :illiam, he ZoXld speak to Ors. 6mith in the ne[t room. Her hXsband Zas Yery serioXsly ill, 6ir :illiam said. Did he threaten to kill himself?

2h, he did, she cried. BXt he did not mean it, she said. 2f coXrse not. It Zas merely a TXestion of rest, said 6ir :illiam; of rest, rest, rest; a long rest in bed. There Zas a delightfXl home doZn in the coXntry Zhere her hXsband ZoXld be perfectly looked after. AZay from her? she asked.

8nfortXnately, yes; the people Ze care for most are not good for Xs Zhen Ze are ill. BXt he Zas not mad, Zas he? 6ir :illiam said he

neYer spoke of "madness"; he called it not haYing a sense of proportion. BXt her hXsband did not like doctors. He ZoXld refXse to go there. 6hortly and kindly 6ir

:illiam e[plained to her the state of the case. He had threatened to kill himself. There Zas no alternatiYe. It Zas a TXestion of laZ. He ZoXld lie in bed in a beaXtifXI hoXse in the coXntry. The nXrses Zere admirable. 6ir

:illiam ZoXld Yisit him once a Zeek. If Ors. :arren 6mith Zas TXite sXre she had no more TXestions to ask—he neYer hXrried his patients— they ZoXld retXrn to her hXsband. 6he had nothing more to ask—not of 6ir

:illiam.

6o they retXrned to the most e[alted of mankind; the criminal Zho faced his jXdges; the Yictim e[posed on the heights; the fXgitiYe; the droZned sailor; the poet of the immortal ode; the /ord Zho had gone from life to death; to 6eptimXs :arren 6mith, Zho sat in the arm-chair Xnder the skylight staring at a photograph of /ady BradshaZ in CoXrt dress, mXttering messages aboXt beaXty.

"The haYe had oXr little talk," said 6ir :illiam. "He says yoX are Yery, Yery ill," 5e]ia cried.

"The haYe been arranging that yoX shoXld go into a home," said 6ir :illiam.

"One of Holmes's homes?" sneered 6eptimXs.

The felloZ made a distastefXl impression. For there Zas in 6ir :illiam, Zhose father had been a tradesman, a natXral respect for breeding and clothing, Zhich shabbiness nettled; again, more profoXndly, there Zas in

6ir :illiam, Zho had neYer had time for reading, a grXdge, deeply bXried, against cXltiYated people Zho came into his room and intimated that doctors, Zhose profession is a constant strain Xpon all the highest facXlties, are not edXcated men.

"One of my homes, Or. :arren 6mith," he said, "Zhere Ze Zill teach yoX

to rest."

And there was just one thing more.

He was quite certain that Zhen Or. Warren Smith was the last man in the world to frighten his wife. But he had talked of killing himself.

"We all have our moments of depression," said Sir William.

Once you fall, pessimists repeated to himself, the man nature is on you. Holmes and Bradshaw are on you. They scoured the desert. They fly screaming into the wilderness. The rack and the thumbscrews are applied. The man nature is remorseless.

"Impulses came upon him sometimes?" Sir William asked, with his pencil on a pink card.

That was his own affair, said Septimus.

"Nobody likes for himself alone," said Sir William, glancing at the photograph of his wife in court dress.

"And you have a brilliant career before you," said Sir William. There was

Mr. Breezer's letter on the table. "An exceptionally brilliant career."

But if he confessed? If he communicated? Could they let him off then, his torturers?

"I—I—" he stammered.

But what was his crime? He could not remember it.

"Yes?" Sir William exclaimed him. (But it was growing late.)

"OYe, trees, there is no crime—What was his message? He could not remember it.

"I—I—" Septimus stammered.

"Try to think as little about yourself as possible," said Sir William kindly.

Really, he was not fit to be about.

Was there anything else they wished to ask him? Sir William would make all arrangements (he murmured to Eliza) and he would let her know between five and six that evening he murmured.

"Trust everything to me," he said, and dismissed them.

1eYer, neYer had 5e]ia felt sXch agony in her life! 6he had asked for help and been deserted! He had failed them! 6ir :illiam BradshaZ Zas not a nice man.

The Xpkeep of that motor car alone mXst cost him TXite a lot, said 6eptimXs, Zhen they got oXt into the street.

6he clXng to his arm. They had been deserted. BXt Zhat more did she Zant?

To his patients he gaYe three-TXarters of an hoXr; and if in this e[acting science Zhich has to do Zith Zhat, after all, Ze knoZ nothing aboXt—the nerYoXs system, the hXman brain—a doctor loses his sense of proportion, as a doctor he fails. Health Ze mXst haYe; and health is proportion; so that Zhen a man comes into yoXr room and says he is Christ (a common delXsion), and has a message, as they mostly haYe, and threatens, as they often do, to kill himself, yoX inYoke proportion; order rest in bed; rest in solitXde; silence and rest; rest ZithoXt friends, ZithoXt books, ZithoXt messages; si[ months' rest; Xntil a man Zho Zent in Zeighing seYen stone si[ comes oXt Zeighing tZelYe



Proportion, diYine proportion, 6ir :illiam's goddess, Zas acTXired  
by 6ir

:illiam Zalking hospitals, catching salmon, begetting one son in  
Harley

6treet by /ady BradshaZ, Zho caXght salmon herself and took  
photographs scarcely to be distingXished from the Zork of  
professionals. :orshipping proportion, 6ir :illiam not only prospered  
himself bXt made England prosper, seclXded her lXnatics, forbade  
childbirth, penalised despair, made it impossible for the Xnfit to  
propagate their YieZs Xntil they, too, shared

his sense of proportion—his, if they Zere men, /ady BradshaZ's if  
they Zere Zomen (she embroidered, knitted, spent foXr nights oXt  
of seYen at home Zith her son), so that not only did his colleagXes  
respect him, his sXbordinates fear him, bXt the friends and  
relations of his patients felt for him the keenest gratitXde for  
insisting that these prophetic Christs and Christesses, Zho  
prophesied the end of the Zorld, or the adYent of God, shoXld  
drink milk in bed, as 6ir :illiam ordered; 6ir :illiam Zith his thirty  
years' e[perience of these kinds of cases, and his infallible instinct,  
this is madness, this sense; in fact, his sense of proportion.

BXt Proportion has a sister, less smiling, more formidable, a Goddess eYen noZ engaged—in the heat and sands of India, the mXd and sZamp of Africa, the pXrlieXs of /ondon, ZhereYer in short the climate or the deYil tempts men to fall from the trXe belief Zhich is her oZn—is eYen noZ engaged in dashing doZn shrines, smashing idols, and setting Xp in their place her oZn stern coXntenance. ConYersion is her name and she feasts on the Zills of the Zeakly, loYing to impress, to impose, adoring her oZn featXres stamped on the face of the popXlace. At Hyde Park Corner on a

tXb she stands preaching; shroXds herself in Zhite and Zalks penitentially disgXised as brotherly loYe throXgh factories and parliaments; offers help, bXt desires poZer; smites oXt of her Zay roXghly the dissentient, or dissatisfied; bestoZs her blessing on those Zho, looking XpZard, catch sXbmissiYely from her eyes the light of their oZn. This lady too (5e]ia

:arren 6mith diYined it) had her dZelling in 6ir :illiam's heart, thoXgh concealed, as she mostly is, Xnder some plaXsible disgXise; some Yenerable name; loYe, dXty, self sacrifice. HoZ he ZoXld Zork—hoZ toil to raise fXnds, propagate reforms, initiate institXtions! BXt conYersion, fastidioXs Goddess, loYes blood better than brick, and feasts most sXbtly

on the hXman Zill. For e[ample, /ady BradshaZ. Fifteen years ago she had gone Xnder. It Zas nothing yoX coXld pXt yoXr finger on;

there had been no scene, no snap; only the sloZ sinking, Zater-logged, of her Zill into his.

6Zeet Zas her smile, sZift her sXbmission; dinner in Harley 6treet, nXmbering eight or nine coXrses, feeding ten or fifteen gXests of the professional classes, Zas smooth and Xrbane. 2nly as the eYening Zore on a Yery slight dXlness, or Xneasiness perhaps, a nerYoXs tZitch, fXmble, stXmble and confXsion indicated, Zhat it Zas really painfXl to belieYe— that the poor lady lied. 2nce, long ago, she had caXght salmon freely: noZ,

TXick to minister to the craYing Zhich lit her hXsband's eye so oilily for dominion, for poZer, she cramped, sTXee]ed, pared, prXned, dreZ back, peeped throXgh; so that ZithoXt knoZing precisely Zhat made the eYening disagreeable, and caXsed this pressXre on the top of the head (Zhich might Zell be impXted to the professional conYersation, or the fatigXe of a great doctor Zhose life, /ady BradshaZ said, "is not his oZn bXt his patients") disagreeable it Zas: so that gXests, Zhen the clock strXck ten, breathed in the air of Harley 6treet eYen Zith raptXre; Zhich relief, hoZeYer, Zas denied to his patients.

There in the grey room, Zith the pictXres on the Zall, and the YalXable fXrnitXre, Xnder the groXnd glass skylight, they learnt the

e[tent of their transgressions; hXddled Xp in arm-chairs, they  
Zatched him go throXgh, for their benefit, a cXrioXs e[ercise Zith  
the arms, Zhich he shot oXt, broXght sharply back to his hip, to  
proYe (if the patient Zas obstinate) that

6ir :illiam Zas master of his oZn actions, Zhich the patient Zas not.  
There some Zeakly broke doZn; sobbed, sXbmitted; others,  
inspired by HeaYen knoZs Zhat intemperate madness, called 6ir  
:illiam to his face a damnable hXmbXg; TXestioned, eYen more  
impioXsly, life itself. :hy liYe? they demanded. 6ir :illiam replied that  
life Zas good. Certainly /ady BradshaZ in ostrich feathers hXng  
oYer the mantelpiece, and as for his income it Zas TXite tZelYe  
thoXsand a year. BXt to Xs, they protested, life has giYen no sXch  
boXnty. He acTXiesced. They lacked a sense of proportion. And  
perhaps, after all, there is no God? He shrXgged his shoXlders. In  
short, this liYing or not liYing is an affair of oXr oZn? BXt there  
they Zere mistaken. 6ir :illiam had a friend in 6Xrrey Zhere they  
taXght, Zhat 6ir :illiam frankly admitted Zas a difficXlt art—a sense  
of proportion. There Zere, moreoYer, family affection; honoXr;  
coXrage; and

a brilliant career. All of these had in 6ir :illiam a resolXte champion.  
If they failed him, he had to sXpport police and the good of  
society, Zhich, he remarked Yery TXietly, ZoXld take care, doZn in  
6Xrrey, that these Xnsocial impXlses, bred more than anything by  
the lack of good blood, Zere held in control. And then stole oXt

from her hiding-place and mounted her throne that Goddess  
Whose IXst is to oYerride opposition, to stamp indelibly in the  
sanctXaries of others the image of herself. Naked, defenceless, the  
e[haXsted, the friendless received the impress of Sir William's Will.  
He scooped; he destroyed. He shXt people Xp. It was this  
combination of

decision and humanity that endeared Sir William so greatly to the  
relations of his Victims.

But Emilia Warren Smith cried, walking down Harley Street, that she  
did not like that man.

Whredding and slicing, dividing and subdividing, the clocks of  
Harley

Street nibbled at the -Xne day, counselled submission, upheld  
authority,

and pointed out in chorus the supreme advantages of a sense of  
proportion, until the mount of time was so far diminished that a  
commercial clock, suspended above a shop in 2[ford Street,  
announced, genially and fraternally, as if it were a pleasure to

0essrs. 5igby and /oZndes to giYe the information gratis, that it  
Zas half-past one.

/ooking Xp, it appeared that each letter of their names stood for  
one of the hoXrs; sXbconscioXsly one Zas gratefXI to 5igby and  
/oZndes for giYing one time ratified by GreenZich; and this  
gratitXde (so HXgh :hitbread rXminated, dallying there in front of  
the shop ZindoZ), natXrally took the form later of bXying off 5igby  
and /oZndes socks or shoes. 6o he rXminated. It Zas his habit. He  
did not go deeply. He brXshed sXrfaces; the dead langXages, the  
liYing, life in Constantinople, Paris, 5ome; riding, shooting, tennis, it  
had been once. The malicioXs asserted that he noZ kept gXard at  
BXckingham Palace, dressed in silk stockings and knee-breeches,  
oYer Zhat nobody kneZ. BXt he did it e[xtremely efficiently. He had  
been afloat on the cream of English society for fifty-fiYe years. He  
had knoZn Prime 0inisters. His affections Zere Xnderstood to be  
deep. And if it Zere trXe that he had not taken part in any of the  
great moYements of the time

or held important office, one or tZo hXmble reforms stood to his  
credit; an improYement in pXblic shelters Zas one; the protection  
of oZls in 1orfolk another; serYant girls had reason to be gratefXI  
to him; and his name at the end of letters to the Times, asking for

fXnds, appealing to the pXblic to protect, to preserYe, to clear Xp litter, to abate smoke, and stamp oXt immorality in parks, commanded respect.

A magnificent figXre he cXt too, paXsing for a moment (as the soXnd of the half hoXr died aZay) to look critically, magisterially, at socks and shoes; impeccable, sXbstantial, as if he beheld the Zorld from a certain eminence, and dressed to match; bXt realised the obligations Zhich si]e, Zealth,

health, entail, and obserYed pXnctilioXsly eYen Zhen not absolXtely necessary, little coXrtesies, old-fashioned ceremonies Zhich gaYe a TXality to his manner, something to imitate, something to remember him by, for

he ZoXld neYer lXnch, for e[ample, Zith /ady BrXton, Zhom he had knoZn these tZenty years, ZithoXt bringing her in his oXtstretched hand a bXnch of carnations and asking Oiss BrXsh, /ady BrXton's secretary, after her brother in 6oXth Africa, Zhich, for some reason, Oiss BrXsh, deficient thoXgh she Zas in eYery attribXte of female charm, so mXch resented that she said "Thank yoX, he's doing Yery Zell in 6oXth Africa," Zhen, for half a do]en years, he had been doing badly in PortsmoXth.

Edy Barton herself preferred Richard DalloZay, who arrived at the next moment. Indeed they met on the doorstep.

Edy Barton preferred Richard DalloZay of course. He was made of much finer material. But she wouldn't let them ruin her poor dear Hugh.

He would never forget his kindness—he had been really remarkably kind

—she forgot precisely upon that occasion. But he had been—remarkably kind. Anyhow, the difference between one man and another does not amount to much. He had never seen the sense of cutting people up, as Clarissa DalloZay did—cutting them up and sticking them together again; not at any rate when one was sitting down. He took Hugh's carnations with her angry grim smile. There was nobody else coming, she said. He had got them there on false pretences, to help her out of a difficulty—

"But let us eat first," she said.



And so there began a soXndless and e[TXisite passing to and fro throXgh sZing doors of aproned Zhite-capped maids, handmaidens not of necessity, bXt adepts in a mystery or grand deception practised by hostesses in 0ayfair from one-thirty to tZo, Zhen, Zith a ZaYe of the

hand, the traffic ceases, and there rises instead this profoXnd illXsion in the first place aboXt the food—hoZ it is not paid for; and then that the table spreads itself YolXntarily Zith glass and silYer, little mats, saXcers of red frXit; films of broZn cream mask tXrbot; in casseroles seYered chickens sZim; coloXred, Xndomestic, the fire bXrns; and Zith the Zine and the coffee (not paid for) rise jocXnd Yisions before mXsing eyes; gently specXlatiYe eyes; eyes to Zhom life appears mXsical, mysterioXs; eyes

noZ kindled to obserYe genially the beaXty of the red carnations Zhich

/ady BrXton (Zhose moYements Zere alZays angXlar) had laid beside her plate, so that HXgh :hitbread, feeling at peace Zith the entire XniYerse

and at the same time completely sXre of his standing, said, resting his fork, "oXldn't they look charming against yoXr lace?"

Oiss BrXsh resented this familiarity intensely. 6he thoXght him an

Xnderbred felloZ. 6he made /ady BrXton laXgh.

/ady BrXton raised the carnations, holding them rather stiffly Zith mXch the same attitXde Zith Zhich the General held the scroll in the pictXre behind her; she remained fi[ed, tranced. :hich Zas she noZ, the General's great-grand-daXghter? great-great-grand-daXghter? 5ichard DalloZay asked himself. 6ir 5oderick, 6ir Oiles, 6ir Talbot—that Zas it. It Zas remarkable hoZ in that family the likeness persisted in the Zomen. 6he shoXld haYe been a general of dragoons herself. And 5ichard ZoXld haYe serYed Xnder her, cheerfXlly; he had the greatest respect for her; he cherished these romantic YieZs aboXt Zell-set-Xp old Zomen of pedigree, and ZoXld haYe liked, in his good-hXmoXred Zay, to bring some yoXng hot-heads of his acTXaintance to lXnch Zith her; as if a type like hers coXld be bred of amiable tea-drinking enthXsiasts! He kneZ her coXntry. He

kneZ her people. There Zas a Yine, still bearing, Zhich either /oYelace or Herrick—she neYer read a Zord poetry of herself, bXt so the story ran— had sat Xnder. Better Zait to pXt before them the TXestion that bothered her (aboXt making an appeal to the pXblic; if so, in Zhat terms and so on), better Zait Xntil they haYe

had their coffee, /ady BrXton thoXght; and so laid the carnations doZn beside her plate.

"HoZ's Clarissa?" she asked abrXptly.

Clarissa alZays said that /ady BrXton did not like her. Indeed, /ady

BrXton had the repXtation of being more interested in politics than people; of talking like a man; of haYing had a finger in some notorioXs intrigXe of the eighties, Zhich Zas noZ beginning to be mentioned in memoirs. Certainly there Zas an alcoYe in her draZing-room, and a table in that alcoYe, and a photograph Xpon that table of General 6ir Talbot Ooore, noZ deceased, Zho had Zritten there (one eYening in the eighties) in /ady

BrXton's presence, Zith her cognisance, perhaps adYice, a telegram ordering the British troops to adYance Xpon an historical occasion. (6he kept the pen and told the story.) ThXs, Zhen she said in her offhand Zay "HoZ's Clarissa?" hXsbands had difficXlty in persXading their ZiYes and indeed, hoZeYer deYoted, Zere secretly doXbtfXI themselYes, of her interest in Zomen Zho often

got in their hXsbands' Zay, preYented them from accepting posts abroad, and had to be taken to the seaside in the middle of the session to recoYer from inflXen]a. 1eYertheless her inTXiry, "HoZ's Clarissa?" Zas knoZn by Zomen infallibly, to be a signal from a Zell-Zisher, from an almost silent companion, Zhose Xtterances (half a do]en perhaps in the coXrse of a lifetime) signified recognition of some feminine comradeship Zhich Zent beneath mascXline lXnch parties and Xnited /ady BrXton and Ors. DalloZay, Zho seldom met, and appeared Zhen they did meet indifferent and eYen hostile, in a singXlar bond.

"I met Clarissa in the Park this morning," said HXgh :hitbread, diYing

into the casserole, an[ioXs to pay himself this little tribXte, for he had only to come to /ondon and he met eYerybody at once; bXt greedy, one of the greediest men she had eYer knoZn, Oilly BrXsh thoXght, Zho obserYed men Zith Xnflinching rectitXde, and Zas capable of eYerlasting deYotion,

to her oZn se[ in particXlar, being knobbed, scraped, angXlar, and entirely

ZithoXt feminine charm.

"D'yoX knoZ Zho's in toZn?" said /ady BrXton sXddenly bethinking her. "2Xr old friend, Peter :alsh."

They all smiled. Peter :alsh! And Or. DalloZay Zas genXinely glad, Oilly BrXsh thoXght; and Or. :hitbread thoXght only of his chicken.

Peter :alsh! All three, /ady BrXton, HXgh :hitbread, and 5ichard DalloZay, remembered the same thing—hoZ passionately Peter had been in loYe; been rejected; gone to India; come a cropper; made a mess of things; and 5ichard DalloZay had a Yery great liking for the dear old felloZ too. Oilly BrXsh saZ that; saZ a depth in the broZn of his eyes; saZ him hesitate; consider; Zhich interested her, as Or. DalloZay alZays

interested her, for Zhat Zas he thinking, she Zondered, aboXt Peter :alsh?

That Peter :alsh had been in loYe Zith Clarissa; that he ZoXld go back directly after IXnch and find Clarissa; that he ZoXld tell her, in so many Zords, that he loYed her. Yes, he ZoXld say that.

Oilly BrXsh once might almost haYe fallen in loYe Zith these silences; and

Or. DalloZay Zas alZays so dependable; sXch a gentleman too. 1oZ,

being forty, /ady BrXton had only to nod, or tXrn her head a little abrXptly, and Oilly BrXsh took the signal, hoZeYer deeply she might be sXnk in these reflections of a detached spirit, of an XncorrXpted soXl Zhom life coXld not bamboo]le, becaXse life had not offered her a trinket of the slightest YalXe; not a cXrl, smile, lip, cheek, nose; nothing ZhateYer; /ady BrXton had only to nod, and Perkins Zas instrXcted to TXicken the coffee.

"Yes; Peter :alsh has come back," said /ady BrXton. It Zas YagXely flattering to them all. He had come back, battered, XnsXccessfXl, to their secXre shores. BXt to help him, they reflected, Zas impossible; there Zas some flaZ in his character. HXgh :hitbread said one might of coXrse mention his name to 60-and-so. He Zrinkled IXgXbrioXsly, conseTXentially, at the thoXght of the letters he ZoXld Zrite to the heads of GoYernment offices aboXt "my old friend, Peter :alsh," and so on. BXt it ZoXldn't lead to anything—not to anything permanent, becaXse of his character.

"In troXble Zith some Zoman," said /ady BrXton. They had all gXessed that that Zas at the bottom of it.

"HoZeYer," said /ady BrXton, an[ioXs to leaYe the sXbject, "Ze shall hear the Zhole story from Peter himself."

(The coffee Zas Yery sloZ in coming.)

"The address?" mXrmXred HXgh :hitbread; and there Zas at once a ripple in the grey tide of serYice Zhich Zashed roXnd /ady BrXton day in, day oXt, collecting, intercepting, enYeloping her in a fine tissXe Zhich broke concXssions, mitigated interrXptions, and spread roXnd the hoXse in Brook

6treet a fine net Zhere things lodged and Zere picked oXt accXrately, instantly, by grey-haired Perkins, Zho had been Zith /ady BrXton these thirty years and noZ Zrote doZn the address; handed it to Or. :hitbread, Zho took oXt his pocket-book, raised his eyebroZs, and slipping it in

among documents of the highest importance, said that he would get

Evelyn to ask him to lunch.

(They were waiting to bring the coffee until Mr. Whitbread had finished.) Hugh was very slow, /ady Burton thought. He was getting fat, she noticed.

Richard always kept himself in the pink of condition. She was getting impatient; the whole of her being was setting positively, undeniably, domineeringly brushing aside all this unnecessary trifling (Peter Walsh and his affairs) upon that subject which engaged her attention, and not merely her attention, but that fibre which was the ramrod of her soul, that essential part of her which Burton would not have been

illuminated Burton; that project for emigrating young people of both sexes born of respectable parents and setting them upon with a fair prospect of doing well in Canada. She exaggerated. She had perhaps lost her sense of proportion. Emigration was not to others the obvious remedy, the sublime conception. It was not to them (not to Hugh, or Richard, or even to devoted

Miss Bresh) the liberator of the pent egotism, which a strong martial Roman, well nourished, well descended, of direct impulses, downright feelings, and little introspective power (broad and simple—why could not every one be broad and simple? she asked)



feels rise Zithin her, once yoXth is past, and mXst eject Xpon some object—it may be Emigration, it may be Emancipation; bXt ZhateYer it be, this object roXnd Zhich the essence of her soXI is daily secreted, becomes ineYitably prismatic, lXstroXs, half looking-glass, half precioXs stone; noZ carefXlly hidden in case people shoXld sneer at it; noZ proXdly displayed. Emigration had become, in short, largely /ady BrXton.

BXt she had to Zrite. And one letter to the Times, she Xsed to say to Oiss BrXsh, cost her more than to organise an e[pedition to 6oXth Africa (Zhich she had done in the Zar). After a morning's battle beginning, tearing Xp, beginning again, she Xsed to feel the fXtility of her oZn Zomanhood as she felt it on no other occasion, and ZoXld tXrn gratefXlly to the thoXght of HXgh :hitbread Zho possessed—no one coXld doXbt it—the art of Zriting letters to the Times.

A being so differently constitXted from herself, Zith sXch a command of langXage; able to pXt things as editors like them pXt; had passions Zhich

one could not call simply greed. /ady BrXton often sXspended judgment upon men in deference to the mysterious accord in which they, but no Zoman, stood to the laws of the XniYerse; kneZ hoZ to pXt things; kneZ Zhat Zas said; so that if 5ichard adYised her, and HXgh Zrote for her, she Zas sXre of being somehoZ right. So she let HXgh eat his soXfflé; asked after poor EYelyn; Zaited until they Zere smoking, and then said,

"Oilly, ZoXld yoX fetch the papers?"

And Oiss BrXsh Zent oXt, came back; laid papers on the table; and HXgh produced his fountain pen; his silver fountain pen, which had done tZenty years' service, he said, XnscreZing the cap. It Zas still in perfect order; he had shown it to the makers; there Zas no reason, they said, Zhy it shoXld eYer Zear oXt; which Zas somehoZ to HXgh's credit, and to the credit of the sentiments which his pen expressed (so 5ichard DalloZay felt) as HXgh began carefully writing capital letters with rings round them in the margin, and thXs marYelloXsly reduced /ady BrXton's tangles to sense, to grammar sXch as the editor of the Times, /ady BrXton felt, watching the marYelloXs transformation, mXst respect. HXgh Zas

sloZ. HXgh Zas pertinacioXs. 5ichard said one mXst take risks.

HXgh proposed

modifications in deference to people's feelings, Zhich, he said rather tartly Zhen 5ichard laXghed, "had to be considered," and read oXt "hoZ, therefore, Ze are of opinion that the times are ripe ... the sXperflXoXs

yoXth of oXr eYer-increasing popXlation ... Zhat Ze oZe to the dead ... " Zhich 5ichard thoXght all stXffing and bXnkXm, bXt no harm in it, of coXrse, and HXgh Zent on drafting sentiments in alphabetical order of the highest nobility, brXshing the cigar ash from his Zaistcoat, and sXmming Xp noZ and then the progress they had made Xntil, finally, he read oXt the draft of a letter Zhich /ady BrXton felt certain Zas a masterpiece. CoXld her oZn meaning soXnd like that?

HXgh coXld not gXarantee that the editor ZoXld pXt it in; bXt he ZoXld be meeting somebody at lXncheon.

:hereXpon /ady BrXton, Zho seldom did a gracefXl thing, stXffed all HXgh's carnations into the front of her dress, and flinging her

hands of the man called him "Oy Prime Minister!" :hat she would have done  
with them both she did not know. They rose. And Richard  
Daloz strolled off as

she went to have a look at the General's portrait, because he meant,  
wherever he had a moment of leisure, to write a history of /ady  
Barton's family.

And Diligent Barton was very proud of her family. But they could  
wait, they could wait, she said, looking at the picture; meaning that  
her family, of military men, administrators, admirals, had been  
men of action, who had done their duty; and Richard's first duty  
was to his country, but it was a fine face, she said; and all the  
papers were ready for Richard down at Aldermiston where the  
time came; the /abor Government she meant. "Ah, the news from  
India!" she cried.

And then, as they stood in the hall taking yellow gloves from the  
box on the malachite table and Hugh was offering Miss Brough with  
the unnecessary courtesy some discarded ticket or other  
compliment, which she loathed from the depths of her heart and

blXshed brick red, 5ichard tXrned to /ady BrXton, Zith his hat in his hand, and said,

"e shall see yoX at oXr party to-night?" ZhereXpon /ady BrXton resXmed the magnificence Zhich letter-Zriting had shattered. 6he might come; or she might not come. Clarissa had ZonderfXI energy. Parties terrified /ady BrXton. BXt then, she Zas getting old. 6o she intimated, standing at her doorZay; handsome; Yery erect; Zhile her choZ stretched behind her, and

Oiss BrXsh disappeared into the backgroXnd Zith her hands fXI of papers.

And /ady BrXton Zent ponderoXsly, majestically, Xp to her room, lay, one arm e[tended, on the sofa. 6he sighed, she snored, not that she Zas asleep, only droZsy and heaYy, droZsy and heaYy, like a field of cloYer in the sXnshine this hot -Xne day, Zith the bees going roXnd and aboXt and the yelloZ bXtterflies. AlZays she Zent back to those fields doZn in DeYonshire, Zhere she had jXmped the brooks on Patty, her pony, Zith

Oortimer and Tom, her brothers. And there Zere the dogs; there Zere the rats; there Zere her father and mother on the laZn Xnder the trees, Zith the tea-things oXt, and the beds of dahlias, the hollyhocks, the pampas grass; and they, little Zretches, alZays Xp to some mischief! stealing back throXgh the shrXbbery, so as not to be seen, all bedraggled from some rogXery. :hat old nXrse Xsed to say aboXt her frocks!

Ah dear, she remembered—it Zas :ednesday in Brook 6treet. Those kind good felloZs, 5ichard DalloZay, HXgh :hitbread, had gone this hot day throXgh the streets Zhose groZl came Xp to her lying on the sofa. PoZer Zas hers, position, income. 6he had liYed in the forefront of her time. 6he had had good friends; knoZn the ablest men of her day. 0XrmXring

/ondon floZed Xp to her, and her hand, lying on the sofa back, cXrled Xpon some imaginary baton sXch as her grandfathers might haYe held, holding Zhich she seemed, droZsy and heaYy, to be commanding battalions marching to Canada, and those good felloZs Zalking across /ondon, that territory of theirs, that little bit of carpet, 0ayfair.

And they Zent fXrther and fXrther from her, being attached to her by a thin thread (since they had lXnched Zith her) Zhich ZoXld

stretch and stretch, get thinner and thinner as they walked across London; as if one's friends were attached to one's body, after latching with them, by a thin thread, which (as she dozed there) became half with the sound of bells, striking the hour or ringing to service, as a single spider's thread is blotted with rain-drops, and, burdened, sags down. So she slept.

And Richard Dallozay and Hugh Whitbread hesitated at the corner of Condit Street at the very moment that Diligent Burton, lying on the sofa, let the thread snap; snored. Contrary winds buffeted at the street corner. They looked in at a shop window; they did not wish to buy or to talk but to part, only with contrary winds buffeting the street corner, with some sort

of lapse in the tides of the body, two forces meeting in a swirl, morning and afternoon, they passed. Some newspaper placard went up in the air, gallantly, like a kite at first, then passed, swooped, flattered; and a lady's veil hung. Yellow awnings trembled. The speed of the morning traffic slackened, and single carts rattled carelessly down half-empty streets. In

London, of which Richard Dallozay was half thinking, a soft warm wind blew back the petals; confused the waters; ruffled the flowering grasses. Haymakers, who had pitched beneath hedges to

sleep aZay the morning toil, parted cXrtains of green blades;  
moYed trembling globes of coZ parsley to see the sky; the blXe,  
the steadfast, the bla]ing sXmmer sky.

AZare that he Zas looking at a silYer tZo-handled -acobean mXg,  
and that

HXgh :hitbread admired condescendingly Zith airs of  
connoisseXrship a

6panish necklace Zhich he thoXght of asking the price of in case  
EYelyn might like it—still 5ichard Zas torpid; coXld not think or  
moYe. /ife had throZn Xp this Zreckage; shop ZindoZs fXll of  
coloXred paste, and one stood stark Zith the lethargy of the old,  
stiff Zith the rigidity of the old, looking in. EYelyn :hitbread might  
like to bXy this 6panish necklace—so she might. YaZn he mXst.  
HXgh Zas going into the shop.

"5ight yoX are!" said 5ichard, folloZing.



Goodness knows he didn't want to go buying necklaces with HXgh. But there are tides in the body. Morning meets afternoon. Borne like a frail shallop on deep, deep floods, /ady BrXton's great-grandfather and his memoir and his campaigns in North America were shelved and sunk. And Oilligent BrXton too. The Zent Xnder. Richard didn't care a straw that became of Emigration; about that letter, whether the editor put it in

or not. The necklace hung stretched between HXgh's admirable fingers. Let him give it to a girl, if he must buy jewels—any girl, any girl in the street. For the Zorthlessness of this life did strike Richard pretty forcibly— buying necklaces for EYelyn. If he'd had a boy he'd have said, Zork, Zork. But he had his Eli]abeth; he adored his Eli]abeth.

"I should like to see Or. DXbonnet," said HXgh in his court worldly way. It appeared that this DXbonnet had the measurements of Ors. Whitbread's neck, or, more strangely still, knew her YieZs upon Spanish jewelry and the extent of her possessions in that line (which HXgh could not remember). All of which seemed to Richard DalloZay awfully odd. For he never gave Clarissa presents, except a bracelet two or three years ago, which had not been a success. The never wore it. It pained him to remember that she never wore

it. And as a single spider's thread after ZaYering here and there attaches itself to the point of a leaf, so 5ichard's mind, recoYering from its lethargy, set noZ on his Zife, Clarissa, Zhom Peter :alsh had loYed so passionately; and 5ichard had had a sXdden Yision of her there at lXncheon; of himself and Clarissa; of their life together; and he dreZ the tray of old jeZels toZards him, and taking Xp first this brooch then that ring, "HoZ mXch is that?" he asked, bXt doXbted his oZn taste. He Zanted to open the draZing-room door and come in holding oXt something; a present for Clarissa. 2nly Zhat? BXt HXgh Zas

on his legs again. He Zas Xnspeakably pompoXs. 5eally, after dealing here for thirty-fiYe years he Zas not going to be pXt off by a mere boy Zho did not knoZ his bXsiness. For DXbonnet, it seemed, Zas oXt, and HXgh ZoXld not bXy anything Xntil Or.

DXbonnet chose to be in; at Zhich the yoXth flXshed and boZed his correct little boZ. It Zas all perfectly correct. And yet 5ichard coXldn't haYe said that to saYe his life! :hy these people

stood that damned insolence he coXld not conceiYe. HXgh Zas becoming an intolerable ass. 5ichard DalloZay coXld not stand more than an hoXr of his society. And, flicking his boZler hat by Zay of fareZell, 5ichard

tXrned at the corner of CondXit 6treet eager, yes, Yery eager, to traYel that spider's thread of attachment betZeen himself and Clarissa; he ZoXld go straight to her, in :estminster.

But he wanted to come in holding something. Flowers? Yes, flowers, since he did not trust his taste in gold; any number of flowers, roses, orchids, to celebrate that day, reckoning things as you will, an event; this feeling about her when they spoke of Peter: almost at Lincoln; and they never spoke of it; not for years had they spoken of it; which, he thought,

grasping his red and white roses together (a fast bunch in tissue paper), is the greatest mistake in the world. The time comes when it can't be said; one's too shy to say it, he thought, pocketing his silence or touch of change, setting off with his great bunch held against his body to

Westminster to say straight out in so many words (which she might think of him), holding out his flowers, "I love you." Why not? Surely it was a miracle thinking of the war, and thousands of poor chaps, with all their lives before them, who yelled together, already half forgotten; it was a miracle. Here he was walking across London to say to Clarissa in so many

words that he loved her. Which one never does say, he thought. Partly one's lazy; partly one's shy. And Clarissa—it was difficult to think of her; except in starts, as at Lincoln, when he saw her there distinctly; their whole life. He stopped at the crossing; and repeated—being simple by nature, and undebarred, because he had tramped, and shot; being pertinacious and dogged, having championed the down-trodden and followed his instincts

in the House of Commons; being preserved in his simplicity yet at the same time grown rather speechless, rather stiff—he repeated that it was a miracle that he should have married Clarissa; a miracle—his life had been a miracle, he thought; hesitating to cross. But it did make his blood boil to

see little creatures of five or six crossing Piccadilly alone. The police ought to have stopped the traffic at once. He had no illusions about the

London police. Indeed, he was collecting evidence of their malpractices; and those costermongers, not allowed to stand their barrows in the streets; and prostitutes, good word, the fault was not in them, nor in young men either, but in our detestable social system and so forth; all of which he considered, could be seen considering, grey, dogged, dapper, clean, as he walked across the Park to tell his wife that he loved her.

For he would say it in so many words, when he came into the room. Because it is a thousand pities never to say what one feels, he thought, crossing the Green Park and observing with pleasure hoZ in the shade of the trees whole families, poor families, were sprazling; children kicking up their legs; sucking milk; paper bags thrown about, which could easily be picked up (if people objected)

by one of those fat gentlemen in liYery; for he Zas of opinion that eYery park, and eYery sTXare, dXring the sXmmer months shoXld be open to children (the grass of the park fIXshed

and faded, lighting Xp the poor mothers of :estminster and their craZling babies, as if a yelloZ lamp Zere moYed beneath). BXt Zhat coXld be done for female Yagrants like that poor creatXre, stretched on her elboZ (as if she had fIXng herself on the earth, rid of all ties, to obserYe cXrioXsly, to specXlate boldly, to consider the Zhys and the Zherefores, impXdent,

loose-lipped, hXmoroXs), he did not knoZ. Bearing his floZers like a Zeapon, 5ichard DalloZay approached her; intent he passed her; still there Zas time for a spark betZeen them—she laXghed at the sight of him, he smiled good-hXmoXredly, considering the problem of the female Yagrant; not that they ZoXld eYer speak. BXt he ZoXld tell Clarissa that he loYed

her, in so many Zords. He had, once Xpon a time, been jealoXs of Peter

:alsh; jealoXs of him and Clarissa. BXt she had often said to him that she had been right not to marry Peter :alsh; Zhich, knoZing Clarissa, Zas obYioXsly trXe; she Zanted sXpport. 1ot that she Zas Zeak; bXt she Zanted sXpport.

As for BXckingham Palace (like an old prima donna facing the aXdience all in Zhite) yoX can't deny it a certain dignity, he considered, nor despise Zhat does, after all, stand to millions of people (a little croZd Zas Zaiting at the gate to see the .ing driYe oXt) for a symbol, absXrd thoXgh it is; a

child Zith a bo[ of bricks coXld haYe done better, he thoXght; looking at the memorial to 4Xeen Victoria (Zhom he coXld remember in her horn spectacles driYing throXgh .ensington), its Zhite moXnd, its billoZing motherliness; bXt he liked being rXled by the descendant of Horsa; he liked continXity; and the sense of handing on the traditions of the past. It Zas a great age in Zhich to haYe liYed. Indeed, his oZn life Zas a miracle; let

him make no mistake aboXt it; here he Zas, in the prime of life, Zalking to his hoXse in :estminster to tell Clarissa that he loYed her. Happiness is

this he thoXght.

It is this, he said, as he entered Dean's Yard. Big Ben Zas beginning to strike, first the Zarning, mXsical; then the hoXr, irreYocable. /Xnch parties Zaste the entire afternoon, he thoXght, approaching his door.

The sound of Big Ben flooded Clarissa's drawing-room, where she sat, ever so annoyed, at her writing-table; worried; annoyed. It was perfectly true that she had not asked Ellie Henderson to her party; but she had done

it on purpose. Mrs. Oarsham wrote "she had told Ellie Henderson she

should ask Clarissa—Ellie so much wanted to come."

But why should she invite all the dull women in London to her parties?

Why should Mrs. Oarsham interfere? And there was Elizabeth closeted all this time with Doris Wilman. Anything more nauseating she could not conceive. Prayer at this hour with that woman. And the sound of the bell flooded the room with its melancholy tone; which receded, and gathered itself together to fall once more, when she heard, distractingly, something fumbling, something scratching at the door. Who at this hour? Three, good heavens! Three already! For with her poising directness and dignity the clock struck three; and she heard nothing else; but the door handle slipped round and in came Richard! What a surprise! In came Richard, holding out flowers. He had failed him, once at Constantinople; and Lady Brixton, whose luxuriant parties were said to

be extraordinarily amusing, had not asked her. He was holding out  
flowers—roses, red and white roses. (But he could not bring himself  
to say he loved her; not in so many words.)

But how lovely, she said, taking his flowers. She understood; she  
understood without his speaking; his Clarissa. She put them in  
vases on the mantelpiece. How lovely they looked! she said. And  
was it amusing,

she asked? Had anybody but you asked after her? Peter was  
back. Ors.

Ors had written. What she ask Ellie Henderson? That woman  
silly

was upstairs.

"But let us sit down for five minutes," said Richard.

It all looked so empty. All the chairs were against the wall. What had  
they been doing? Well, it was for the party; no, he had not forgotten,



the party. Peter :alsh Zas back. 2h yes; she had had him. And he Zas going to get a diYorce; and he Zas in loYe Zith some Zoman oXt there. And he hadn't changed in the slightest. There she Zas, mending her dress... .

"Thinking of BoXrton," she said.

"HXgh Zas at lXnch," said 5ichard. 6he had met him too! :ell, he Zas getting absolXtely intolerable. BXying EYelyn necklaces; fatter than eYer; an intolerable ass.

"And it came oYer me 'I might haYe married yoX,'" she said, thinking of Peter sitting there in his little boZ-tie; Zith that knife, opening it, shXtting it. "-Xst as he alZays Zas, yoX knoZ."

They Zere talking aboXt him at lXnch, said 5ichard. (BXt he coXld not tell her he loYed her. He held her hand. Happiness is this, he

thought.) They had been writing a letter to the Times for Diligent  
Barton. That was about all high was fit for.

"And our dear Miss Deane?" he asked. Clarissa thought the roses  
absolutely lovely; first bunched together; now of their own accord  
starting apart.

"Deane arrived just as we were done lunch," she said. "Elizabeth turns  
pink. They shut themselves up. I suppose they're praying."

Lord! He didn't like it; but these things pass over if you let them.

"In a mackintosh with an umbrella," said Clarissa.

He had not said "I love you"; but he held her hand. Happiness is  
this, is this, he thought.

"But why should I ask all the dinner women in London to my parties?"  
said

Clarissa. And if Mrs. Oarsham gave a party, did she invite her guests?

"Poor Ellie Henderson," said Richard—it was a very odd thing to say

Clarissa minded about her parties, he thought.

But Richard had no notion of the look of a room. However—what was he going to say?

If she worried about these parties he would not let her give them. Did she

think she had married Peter? But he must go.

He mXst be off, he said, getting Xp. BXt he stood for a moment as if he Zere aboXt to say something; and she Zondered Zhat? :hy? There Zere the roses.

"6ome Committee?" she asked, as he opened the door.

"Armenians," he said; or perhaps it Zas "Albanians."

And there is a dignity in people; a solitXde; eYen betZeen hXsband and Zife a gXlf; and that one mXst respect, thoXght Clarissa, Zatching him open the door; for one ZoXld not part Zith it oneself, or take it, against his Zill, from one's hXsband, ZithoXt losing one's independence, one's self- respect—something, after all, priceless.

He retXrned Zith a pilloZ and a TXilt.

"An hoXr's complete rest after lXncheon," he said. And he Zent.

How like him! He would go on saying "An hour's complete rest after lunch" to the end of time, because a doctor had ordered it once. It was like him to take what doctors said literally; part of his adorable, divine simplicity, which no one had to the same extent; which made him go and do the thing while she and Peter frittered their time away bickering. He was already halfway to the House of Commons, to his Armenians, his

Albanians, having settled her on the sofa, looking at his roses. And people would say, "Clarissa Dallo is spoiled." She cared much more for her roses than for the Armenians. He thought of existence, maimed, frozen,

the victims of cruelty and injustice (she had heard Richard say so over and over again)—no, she could feel nothing for the Albanians, or was it the Armenians? But she loved her roses (didn't that help the Armenians?)—the only flowers she could bear to see cut. But Richard was already at the House of Commons; at his Committee, having settled all her difficulties. But no; alas, that was not true. He did not see the reasons against asking Ellie Henderson. She would do it, of course, as he wished it. Since he had brought the pills, she would lie down... . But—But—Why did she suddenly feel, for no reason that she could discover, desperately unhappy? As a person who has dropped some grain of pearl or diamond into the

grass and parts the tall blades Yery carefXlly, this Zay and that, and searches here and there Yainly, and at last spies it there at the roots, so she Zent throXgh one thing and another; no, it Zas not 6ally 6eton saying that

5ichard ZoXld neYer be in the Cabinet becaXse he had a second-class brain (it came back to her); no, she did not mind that; nor Zas it to do Zith Eli]abeth either and Doris .ilman; those Zere facts. It Zas a feeling, some Xnpleasant feeling, earlier in the day perhaps; something that Peter had said, combined Zith some depression of her oZn, in her bedroom, taking off her hat; and Zhat 5ichard had said had added to it, bXt Zhat had he said? There Zere his roses. Her parties! That Zas it! Her parties! Both of them criticised her Yery Xnfairly, laXghed at her Yery XnjXstly, for her parties. That Zas it! That Zas it!

:ell, hoZ Zas she going to defend herself? 1oZ that she kneZ Zhat it Zas, she felt perfectly happy. They thoXght, or Peter at any rate thoXght, that she enjoyed imposing herself; liked to haYe famoXs people aboXt her; great names; Zas simply a snob in short. :ell, Peter might think so.

Richard merely thought it foolish of her to like excitement when she knew it was bad for her heart. It was childish, he thought. And both were true. That she liked was simply life.

"That's what I do it for," she said, speaking aloud, to life.

Since she was lying on the sofa, cloistered, empty, the presence of this thing which she felt to be so obvious became physically evident; with robes of sound from the street, sunny, with hot breath, whispering, blowing out the blinds. But suppose Peter said to her, "Yes, yes, but your parties— that's the sense of your parties?" all she could say was (and nobody could be expected to understand): They're an offering; which sounded horribly vague. But who was Peter to make out that life was all plain sailing?— Peter always in love, always in love with the wrong woman? That's your love? she might say to him. And she knew his answer; how it is the most important thing in the world and no woman possibly understood it. Very well. But could any man understand that she meant either? about life?

She could not imagine Peter or Richard taking the trouble to give a party for no reason whatever.

BXt to go deeper, beneath Zhat people said (and these jXdgements, hoZ sXperficial, hoZ fragmentary they are!) in her oZn mind noZ, Zhat did it mean to her, this thing she called life? Zh, it Zas Yery TXeer. Here Zas 6o- and-so in 6oXth .ensington; some one Xp in BaysZater; and somebody else, say, in Oayfair. And she felt TXite continXoXsly a sense of their e[istence; and she felt Zhat a Zaste; and she felt Zhat a pity; and she felt if only they coXld be broXght together; so she did it. And it Zas an offering; to combine, to create; bXt to Zhom?

An offering for the sake of offering, perhaps. AnyhoZ, it Zas her gift.

1othing else had she of the slightest importance; coXld not think, Zrite, eYen play the piano. 6he mXddled Armenians and TXrks; loYed sXccess; hated discomfort; mXst be liked; talked oceans of nonsense: and to this

day, ask her Zhat the ETXator Zas, and she did not knoZ. All the same, that one day shoXld folloZ another; :ednesday, ThXrday, Friday, 6atXrday;



that one should wake up in the morning; see the sky; walk in the park; meet HXgh :hitbread; then suddenly in came Peter; then these roses; it was enough. After that, her unbelievable death was!—that it must end; and no one in the whole world would know she had loved it all; her, every instant ...

The door opened. Elizabeth knew that her mother was resting. She came in

very quietly. She stood perfectly still. As if that some thought had been

reckoned on the coast of Norfolk (as Mrs. Hilbery said), had mixed with the Dallozay ladies, perhaps, a hundred years ago? For the Dallozays, in general, were fair-haired; blue-eyed; Elizabeth, on the contrary, was dark; had Chinese eyes in a pale face; an oriental mystery; was gentle, considerate, still. As a child, she had had a perfect sense of humor; but now at seventeen, why, Clarissa could not in the least understand, she had become very serious; like a hyacinth, sheathed in glossy green, with buds just tinted, a hyacinth which has had no sun.

She stood there still and looked at her mother; but the door was ajar, and outside the door was Miss .ilman, as Clarissa knew; Miss .ilman in her mackintosh, listening to what they said.

Yes, Miss .ilman stood on the landing, and wore a mackintosh; but she had her reasons. First, it was cheap; second, she was over forty; and did not, after all, dress to please. She was poor, moreover; degradingly poor.

Therefore she would not be taking jobs from people like the Dallozays; from rich people, who liked to be kind. Or Dallozay, to do him justice, had been kind. But Mrs. Dallozay had not. She had been merely condescending. She came from the most worthless of all classes—the rich, with a smattering of culture. They had expensive things everywhere; pictures, carpets, lots of servants. She considered that she had a perfect right to anything that the Dallozays did for her.

She had been cheated. Yes, the word was no exaggeration, for surely a girl has a right to some kind of happiness? And she had never been happy, that with being so clumsy and so poor. And

then, just as she might have had a chance at Miss Dolby's school, the Zar came; and she had never been able to tell lies. Miss Dolby thought she would be happier with people who shared her views about the Germans. She had had to go. It was true that the family was of German origin; she had seen the name Schliman in the eighteenth century; but her brother had been killed. They turned her out because she would not pretend that the Germans were all villains—when she had German friends, when the only happy days of her life had been spent in Germany! And after all, she could read history. She had had to take whatever she could get. Mr. Dallozay had come across her working for the Friends. He had allowed her (and that was really generous of him) to teach

his daughter history. Also she did a little Extension lecturing and so on. Then Mr Ford had come to her (and here she always bowed her head). She had seen the light two years and three months ago. Now she did not envy women like Clarissa Dallozay; she pitied them.

She pitied and despised them from the bottom of her heart, as she stood on the soft carpet, looking at the old engraving of a little girl with a muff.

With all this [X] going on, what hope was there for a better state of things? Instead of lying on a sofa—"O my mother is resting,"

Eli]abeth had said—she shoXld haYe been in a factory; behind a coXnter; Ors. DalloZay and all the other fine ladies!

Bitter and bXrning, Oiss .ilman had tXrned into a chXrch tZo years three months ago. 6he had heard the 5eY. EdZard :hittaker preach; the boys sing; had seen the solemn lights descend, and Zhether it Zas the mXsic, or the Yoices (she herself Zhen alone in the eYening foXnd comfort in a Yiolin; bXt the soXnd Zas e[crXciating; she had no ear), the hot and

tXrbXlent feelings Zhich boiled and sXrged in her had been assXaged as she sat there, and she had Zept copioXsly, and gone to call on Or. :hittaker at his priYate hoXse in .ensington. It Zas the hand of God, he said. The /ord had shoZn her the Zay. 6o noZ, ZheneYer the hot and painfXl feelings boiled Zithin her, this hatred of Ors. DalloZay, this grXdge against the Zorld, she thoXght of God. 6he thoXght of Or. :hittaker. 5age Zas sXcceeded by calm. A sZeet saYoXr filled her Yeins, her lips parted, and, standing formidable Xpon the landing in her mackintosh, she looked Zith steady and sinister serenity at Ors. DalloZay, Zho came oXt Zith her daXghter.

Eli]abeth said she had forgotten her gloYes. That Zas becaXse Oiss  
.ilman and her mother hated each other. 6he coXld not bear to see  
them together. 6he ran Xpstairs to find her gloYes.

BXt Oiss .ilman did not hate Ors. DalloZay. TXrning her large  
gooseberry-coloXred eyes Xpon Clarissa, obserYing her small pink  
face,

her delicate body, her air of freshness and fashion, Oiss .ilman felt,  
Fool!

6impleton! YoX Zho haYe knoZn neither sorroZ nor pleasXre; Zho  
haYe trifled yoXr life aZay! And there rose in her an oYermastering  
desire to oYercome her; to Xnmask her. If she coXld haYe felled  
her it ZoXld haYe

eased her. BXt it Zas not the body; it Zas the soXI and its mockery  
that she Zished to sXbdXe; make feel her mastery. If only she  
coXld make her Zeep; coXld rXin her; hXmiliate her; bring her to  
her knees crying, YoX are right! BXt this Zas God's Zill, not Oiss  
.ilman's. It Zas to be a religioXs Yictory.

6o she glared; so she gloZered.

Clarissa Zes really shocked. This a Christian—this Zoman! This Zoman had taken her daXghter from her! 6he in toXch Zith inYisible presences! HeaYy, Xgly, commonplace, ZithoXt kindness or grace, she knoZ the meaning of life!

"YoX are taking Eli]abeth to the 6tores?" Ors. DalloZay said.

Oiss .ilman said she Zas. They stood there. Oiss .ilman Zas not going to make herself agreeable. 6he had alZays earned her liYing. Her knoZledge of modern history Zas thoroXgh in the e[treme. 6he did oXt of her meagre income set aside so mXch for caXses she belieYed in; Zhereas this Zoman did nothing, belieYed nothing; broXght Xp her daXghter—bXt here Zas Eli]abeth, rather oXt of breath, the beaXtifXl girl.

6o they Zere going to the 6tores. 2dd it Zas, as Oiss .ilman stood there (and stand she did, Zith the poZer and tacitXrinity of some prehistoric monster armoXred for primeYal Zarfare), hoZ, second by second, the idea of her diminished, hoZ hatred (Zhich Zas for

ideas, not people) crumbled, how she lost her malignity, her side,  
became second by second merely

Oisselman, in a mackintosh, whom Heaven knows Clarissa would  
have liked to help.

At this dazing of the monster, Clarissa laughed. Saying good-  
bye, she laughed.

When they went together, Oisselman and Elizabeth, downstairs.

With a sudden impulse, with a violent anguish, for this woman was  
taking her daughter from her, Clarissa leant over the banisters  
and cried out, "Remember the party! Remember our party  
tonight!"

But Elizabeth had already opened the front door; there was a man  
passing;

she did not answer.

“OYe and religion! thoXght Clarissa, going back into the draZing-room, tingling all oYer. HoZ detestable, hoZ detestable they are! For noZ that the body of Oiss .ilman Zas not before her, it oYerZhelmed her—the idea. The crXeleast things in the Zorld, she thoXght, seeing them clXmsy, hot, domineering, hypocritical, eaYesdropping, jealoXs, infinitely crXel and XnscrXpXloXs, dressed in a mackintosh coat, on the landing; loYe and religion. Had she eYer tried to conYert any one herself? Did she not Zish eYerybody merely to be themseYes? And she Zatched oXt of the ZindoZ the old lady opposite climbing Xpstairs. /et her climb Xpstairs if she Zanted to; let her stop; then let her, as Clarissa had often seen her, gain

her bedroom, part her cXrtains, and disappear again into the backgroXnd.

6omehoZ one respected that—that old Zoman looking oXt of the ZindoZ, TXite XnconscioXs that she Zas being Zatched. There Zas something solemn in it—bXt loYe and religion ZoXld destroy that, ZhateYer it Zas, the priYacy of the soXl. The odioXs .ilman ZoXld destroy it. Yet it Zas a sight that made her Zant to cry.



Everything that was fine, everything that was true went. Take Peter: a handsome man, charming, clever, with ideas about everything. If you wanted to know about Pope, say, or Addison, or just to talk nonsense, that people were like, that things meant, Peter knew better than any one. It was Peter who had helped her; Peter who had lent her books. But look at the woman he loved—Ylgar, trivial, commonplace. Think of Peter in love—he came to see her after all these years, and what did he talk about? Himself. Horrible passion! she thought. Degrading passion! she thought, thinking of Elman and her Elizabeth talking to the Army and the stores.

Big Ben struck the half-hour.

How extraordinary it was, strange, yes, touching, to see the old lady (they had been neighbours ever so many years) move away from the window, as if she were attached to that sound, that string. Gigantic as it was, it had something to do with her. Down, down, into the midst of ordinary things the finger fell making the moment solemn. She was forced, so Clarissa

imagined, by that soXnd, to moYe, to go—bXt Zhere? Clarissa tried to folloZ her as she tXrned and disappeared, and coXld still jXst see her Zhite cap moYing at the back of the bedroom. 6he Zas still there moYing aboXt

at the other end of the room. :hy creeds and prayers and mackintoshes? Zhen, thoXght Clarissa, that's the miracle, that's the mystery; that old lady, she meant, Zhom she coXld see going from chest of draZers to dressing- table. 6he coXld still see her. And the sXpreme mystery Zhich .ilman might say she had solYed, or Peter might say he had solYed, bXt Clarissa didn't belieYe either of them had the ghost of an idea of solYing, Zas simply this: here Zas one room; there another. Did religion solYe that, or loYe?

/oYe—bXt here the other clock, the clock Zhich alZays strXck tZo minXtes after Big Ben, came shXffling in Zith its lap fXll of odds and ends, Zhich it dXmped doZn as if Big Ben Zere all Yery Zell Zith his majesty laying doZn the laZ, so solemn, so jXst, bXt she mXst remember all sorts of little things besides—Ors. Oarsham, Ellie Henderson, glasses for ices— all sorts of little things came flooding and lapping and dancing in on the Zake of that solemn stroke Zhich lay flat like a bar of gold on the sea.

Ors. Oarsham, Ellie Henderson, glasses for ices. 6he mXst telephone  
noZ  
at once.

VolXBly, troXbloXsly, the late clock soXnded, coming in on the  
Zake of Big Ben, Zith its lap fXll of trifles. Beaten Xp, broken Xp by  
the assaXlt of carriages, the brXtality of Yans, the eager adYance  
of myriads of angXlar men, of flaXnting Zomen, the domes and  
spires of offices and hospitals, the last relics of this lap fXll of odds  
and ends seemed to break, like the spray of an e[haXsted ZaYe,  
Xpon the body of Oiss .ilman standing still in the street for a  
moment to mXtter "It is the flesh."

It Zas the flesh that she mXst control. Clarissa DalloZay had  
insXlted her. That she e[pected. BXt she had not triXmphed; she  
had not mastered the flesh. 8gly, cIXmsy, Clarissa DalloZay had  
laXghed at her for being that; and had reYiYed the fleshly desires,  
for she minded looking as she did beside Clarissa. 1or coXld she  
talk as she did. BXt Zhy Zish to resemble her? :hy? 6he despised

Ors. DalloZay from the bottom of her heart. 6he Zas not serioXs. 6he Zas not good. Her life Zas a tissXe of Yanity and deceit. Yet Doris .ilman had been oYercome. 6he had, as a matter of fact, Yery nearly bXrst into tears Zhen Clarissa DalloZay laXghed at her. "It is the flesh, it is the flesh," she mXttered (it being her habit to talk aloXd) trying to sXbdXe this tXrbXlent and painfXl feeling as she Zalked doZn Victoria 6treet. 6he prayed to God. 6he coXld not help being Xgly; she coXld not afford to bXy pretty clothes. Clarissa DalloZay had laXghed— bXt she ZoXld concentrate her mind Xpon something else Xntil she had reached the pillar-bo[. At any rate she had got Eli]abeth. BXt she ZoXld think of something else; she ZoXld think of 5Xssia; Xntil she reached the pillar-bo[.

HoZ nice it mXst be, she said, in the coXntry, strXgglng, as Or. :hittaker had told her, Zith that Yiolent grXdge against the Zorld Zhich had scorned her, sneered at her, cast her off, beginning Zith this indignity—the infliction of her XnloYable body Zhich people coXld not bear to see. Do her hair as she might, her forehead remained like an egg, bald, Zhite. 1o clothes sXtited her. 6he might bXy anything. And for a Zoman, of coXrse, that meant neYer meeting the opposite se[. 1eYer ZoXld she come first

Zith any one. 6ometimes lately it had seemed to her that, e[cept for Eli]abeth, her food Zas all that she liYed for; her comforts; her dinner, her tea; her hot-Zater bottle at night. BXt one mXst fight; YanTXish; haYe faith in God. Or. :hittaker had said she Zas there for a pXrpose. BXt no one kneZ the agony! He said, pointing to the crXcifi[, that God kneZ. BXt Zhy shoXld she haYe to sXffer Zhen other Zomen, like Clarissa DalloZay, escaped? .noZledge comes throXgh sXffering, said Or. :hittaker.

6he had passed the pillar-bo[, and Eli]abeth had tXrned into the cool broZn tobacco department of the Army and 1aYy 6tores Zhile she Zas still mXttering to herself Zhat Or. :hittaker had said aboXt knoZledge coming throXgh sXffering and the flesh. "The flesh," she mXttered.

:hat department did she Zant? Eli]abeth interrXpted her.

"Petticoats," she said abrXptly, and stalked straight on to the lift.

8p they Zent. Eli]abeth gXided her this Zay and that; gXided her in her abstraction as if she had been a great child, an XnZieldy

battleship. There Zere the petticoats, broZn, decoroXs, striped, friYoloXs, solid, flimsy; and

she chose, in her abstraction, portentoXsly, and the girl serYing thoXght her mad.

Eli]abeth rather Zondered, as they did Xp the parcel, Zhat Oiss .ilman Zas thinking. They mXst haYe their tea, said Oiss .ilman, roXsing, collecting herself. They had their tea.

Eli]abeth rather Zondered Zhether Oiss .ilman coXld be hXngry. It Zas her Zay of eating, eating Zith intensity, then looking, again and again, at a plate of sXgared cakes on the table ne[t them; then, Zhen a lady and a

child sat doZn and the child took the cake, coXld Oiss .ilman really mind it? Yes, Oiss .ilman did mind it. 6he had Zanted that cake—the pink one. The pleasXre of eating Zas almost the only pXre pleasXre left her, and then to be baffled eYen in that!

When people are happy, they have a reserve, she had told Eliabeth, upon which to draw, whereas she was like a wheel with a tyre (she was fond of such metaphors), jolted by every pebble, so she would say staying on after the lesson standing by the fireplace with her bag of books, her "satchel," she called it, on a Tuesday morning, after the lesson was over. And she talked too about the Zar. After all, there were people who did not think the English invariably right. There were books. There were meetings. There were other points of view. Would Eliabeth like to come with her to listen to 60-and-so (a most extraordinary looking old man)? Then Miss

Millman took her to some church in Kensington and they had tea with a clergyman. He had lent her books. /aZ, medicine, politics, all professions are open to women of your generation, said Miss Millman. But for herself, her career was absolutely ruined and was it her fault? Good gracious, said Eliabeth, no.

And her mother would come calling to say that a hamper had come from Burton and would Miss Millman like some flowers? To Miss Millman she was always very, very nice, but Miss Millman smashed the flowers all in a bunch, and hadn't any small talk, and

Zhat interested Oiss .ilman bored her mother, and Oiss .ilman and she Zere terrible together; and Oiss

.ilman sZelled and looked Yery plain. BXt then Oiss .ilman Zas frightfXlly cleYer. Eli]abeth had neYer thoXght aboXt the poor. They liYed Zith eYerything they Zanted,—her mother had breakfast in bed eYery day;

/Xcy carried it Xp; and she liked old Zomen becaXse they Zere DXchesses, and being descended from some /ord. BXt Oiss .ilman said (one of those TXesday mornings Zhen the lesson Zas oYer), "Oy grandfather kept an oil and coloXr shop in .ensington." Oiss .ilman made one feel so small.

Oiss .ilman took another cXp of tea. Eli]abeth, Zith her oriental bearing, her inscrXtable mystery, sat perfectly Xpright; no, she did not Zant anything more. 6he looked for her gloYes—her Zhite gloYes. They Zere Xnder the table. Ah, bXt she mXst not go! Oiss .ilman coXld not let her go! this yoXth, that Zas so beaXtifXI, this girl, Zhom she genXinely loYed! Her large hand opened and shXt on the table.



But perhaps it was a little flat somehow, Elizabeth felt. And really she

would like to go.

But said Miss Elman, "I'm not quite finished yet."

Of course, then, Elizabeth would wait. But it was rather stiffy in here. "Are you going to the party to-night?" Miss Elman said.

Elizabeth

supposed she was going; her mother wanted her to go. She must not let parties absorb her, Miss Elman said, fingering the last two inches of a chocolate éclair.

She did not much like parties, Elizabeth said. Miss Elman opened her mouth, slightly projected her chin, and swallowed down the last inches of the chocolate éclair, then wiped her fingers, and washed the tea round in her cup.

She was about to split asunder, she felt. The agony was so terrific. If she could grasp her, if she could clasp her, if she could make her hers absolutely and forever and then die; that was all she wanted. But to sit here, unable to think of anything to say; to see Elizabeth turning against her; to be felt repulsive even by her—it was too much; she could not stand it. The thick fingers curled inwards.

"I never go to parties," said Miss Gilman, just to keep Elizabeth from going. "People don't ask me to parties"—and she knew as she said it that it

was this egotism that was her undoing; or, perhaps, she had earned her; but she could not help it. She had suffered so horribly. "Why should they ask me?" she said. "I'm plain, I'm unhappy." She knew it was idiotic. But it was all those people passing—people with parcels who despised her, who made her say it. However, she was Doris Gilman. She had her degree. She was a woman who had made her way in the world. Her knowledge of modern history was more than respectable.

"I don't pity myself," she said. "I pity"—she meant to say "your mother" but no, she could not, not to Elizabeth. "I pity other people," she said, "more."

Like some dumb creature who has been brought up to a gate for an unknown purpose, and stands there longing to gallop away, Elizabeth Dallo sat silent. Was Miss Milman going to say anything more?

"Don't quite forget me," said Doris Milman; her voice trembled. Five or six to the end of the field the dumb creature galloped in terror.

The great hand opened and shut.

Elizabeth turned her head. The waitress came. One had to pay at the desk, Elizabeth said, and went off, dragging out, so Miss Milman

felt, the Yery entrails in her body, stretching them as she crossed the room, and then, Zith a final tZist, boZing her head Yery politely, she Zent.

6he had gone. Oiss .ilman sat at the marble table among the éclairs, stricken once, tZice, thrice by shocks of sXffering. 6he had gone. Ors. DalloZay had triXmphed. Eli]abeth had gone. BeaXty had gone, yoXth had gone.

6o she sat. 6he got Xp, blXndered off among the little tables, rocking slightly from side to side, and somebody came after her Zith her petticoat, and she lost her Zay, and Zas hemmed in by trXnks specially prepared for taking to India; ne[t got among the accoXchement sets, and baby linen; throXgh all the commodities of the Zorld, perishable and permanent,

hams, drXgs, floZers, stationery, YarioXsly smelling, noZ sZeet, noZ soXr

she lXrched; saZ herself thXs lXrching Zith her hat askeZ, Yery red in the face, fXll length in a looking-glass; and at last came oXt into the street.

The tower of Westminster Cathedral rose in front of her, the habitation of God. In the midst of the traffic, there was the habitation of God. Doggedly she set off with her parcel to that other sanctuary, the Abbey, where,

raising her hands in a tent before her face, she sat beside those driven into shelter too; the variously assorted worshippers, regardless of social rank, almost of sex, as they raised their hands before their faces; but once they removed them, instantly reverent, middle class, English men and women, some of them desirous of seeing the Zerkos.

But Miss Milman held her tent before her face. So she was deserted; no one rejoined. These worshippers came in from the street to replace the strollers, and still, as people gazed round and shuffled past the tomb of the

unknown warrior, still she barred her eyes with her fingers and tried in this double darkness, for the light in the Abbey was bodiless, to aspire above the vanities, the desires, the commodities, to rid herself both of hatred and of love. Her hands twitched. She seemed to struggle. Yet to others God was accessible and the path to Him smooth. Mr. Fletcher, retired, of the Treasury, Mrs. Gorham, widow of the famous .C., approached Him simply, and having

done their praying, leant back, enjoyed the music (the organ pealed sweetly), and saw Miss Milman at the end of the row, praying, praying, and, being still on the threshold of their Underworld, thought of her sympathetically as a soul haunting the same territory; a soul cast out of immaterial substance; not a Roman, a soul.

But Mr. Fletcher had to go. He had to pass her, and being himself neat as a new pin, could not help being a little distressed by the poor lady's

disorder; her hair down; her parcel on the floor. He did not at once let him pass. But, as he stood gazing about him, at the white marbles, grey window panes, and accumulated treasures (for he was extremely proud of the Abbey), her largeness, robustness, and power as she sat there shifting her knees from time to time (it was so rough the approach to her God—so tough her desires) impressed him, as they had impressed Mrs. Dallorey (she could not get the thought of her out of her mind that afternoon), the 5th Earl of Hittaker, and Elizabeth too.

And Elizabeth waited in Victoria Street for an omnibus. It was so nice to be out of doors. He thought perhaps she need not go home just yet. It was so nice to be out in the air. So she would get

on to an omnibus. And already, even as she stood there, in her very Zell clothes, it was beginning... People were beginning to compare her to poplar trees, early daisies, hyacinths, fuchsias, ruscus, Zantedeschia, and garden lilies; and it made her life a burden to her, for she so much preferred being left alone to do what she liked in the country, but they would compare her to lilies, and she had to go to parties, and London was so dreary compared with being alone in the country with her father and the dogs.

Blessed, settled, were off—garish carriages, glistening with red and yellow varnish. But which should she get on to? She had no preferences.

Of course, she would not push her way. She inclined to be passive. It was expression she needed, but her eyes were fine, Chinese, oriental, and, as her mother said, with such nice shoulders and holding herself so straight, she was always charming to look at; and lately, in the evening especially, when she was interested, for she never seemed excited, she looked almost beautiful, very stately, very serene. What could she be thinking? Every man fell in love with her, and she was really awfully bored. For it was beginning. Her mother could see that—the compliments were beginning. That she did not care more about it—for instance for

her clothes— sometimes Zorried Clarissa, bXt perhaps it Zas as Zell Zith all those pXppies and gXinea pigs aboXt haYing distemper, and it gaYe her a charm. And noZ there Zas this odd friendship Zith Oiss .ilman. :ell, thoXght Clarissa aboXt three o'clock in the morning, reading Baron Oarbot for she coXld not sleep, it proYes she has a heart.

6Xddenly Eli]abeth stepped forZard and most competently boarded the omnibXs, in front of eYerybody. 6he took a seat on top. The impetXoXs creatXre—a pirate—started forZard, sprang aZay; she had to hold the rail to steady herself, for a pirate it Zas, reckless, XnscrXpXloXs, bearing doZn rXthlessly, circXmYenting dangeroXsly, boldly snatching a passenger, or ignoring a passenger, sTXee]ing eel-like and arrogant in betZeen, and then rXshing insolently all sails spread Xp :hitehall. And did Eli]abeth giYe

one thoXght to poor Oiss .ilman Zho loYed her ZithoXt jealoXsy, to Zhom she had been a faZn in the open, a moon in a glade? 6he Zas delighted to

be free. The fresh air Zas so delicioXs. It had been so stXffy in the Army and 1aYy 6tores. And noZ it Zas like riding, to be rXshing Xp :hitehall; and to each moYement of the omnibXs the beaXtifXI



body in the faded-colored coat responded freely like a rider, like the figure-head of a ship, for the breeze slightly disarranged her; the heat gave her cheeks the pallor of white painted wood; and her fine eyes, having no eyes to meet, gazed ahead, blank, bright, with the staring incredible innocence of sculpture.

It was always talking about her own sufferings that made Miss Gilman so difficult. And was she right? If it was being on committees and giving up hours and hours every day (she hardly ever saw him in London) that helped the poor, her father did that, goodness knows,—if that was that

Miss Gilman meant about being a Christian; but it was so difficult to say.

Oh, she would like to go a little further. Another penny was it to the Strand? Here was another penny then. She would go up the Strand.

She liked people who were ill. And every profession is open to the women of your generation, said Miss Gilman. So she might be a doctor. She might be a farmer. Animals are often ill. She might own a thousand acres and have people under her. She would go and

see them in their cottages. This was Somerset House. One might be a very good farmer—and that, strangely enough though Miss Milman had her share in it, was almost entirely due to Somerset House. It looked so splendid, so serious, that

great grey building. And she liked the feeling of people working. She liked those arches, like shapes of grey paper, breasting the stream of the

strand. It was quite different here from Westminster, she thought, getting off at Chancery Lane. It was so serious; it was so busy. In short, she would like to have a profession. She would become a doctor, a farmer, possibly go into Parliament, if she found it necessary, all because of the strand.

The feet of those people busy about their activities, hands putting stone to stone, minds eternally occupied not with trivial chattering (comparing women to poplars—which was rather exciting, of course, but very silly), but with thoughts of ships, of business, of law, of administration, and with it all so stately (she was in the Temple), gay (there was the river), pious (there was the Church), made her quite determined, whatever her mother might say, to become either a farmer or a doctor. But she was, of course, rather lazy.

And it was much better to say nothing about it. It seemed so silly. It was the sort of thing that did sometimes happen, when one was alone— buildings with architects' names, crowds of people coming back from the city having more power than single clergymen in Kensington, than any of the books Miss Milman had lent her, to stimulate that lay slumber, clumsy, and shy on the mind's sandy floor to break surface, as a child suddenly stretches its arms; it was just that, perhaps, a sigh, a stretch of the arms, an impulse, a revelation, which has its effects for ever, and then doze again it went to the sandy floor. She must go home. She must dress for dinner. But what was the time?—Where was a clock?

She looked up Fleet Street. She walked just a little way towards St. Paul's, shyly, like some one penetrating on tiptoe, exploring a strange house by night with a candle, on edge lest the owner should suddenly fling wide his bedroom door and ask her business, nor did she dare wander off into the queer alleys, tempting by- streets, any more than in a strange house open doors which might be bedroom doors, or sitting-room doors, or lead straight to the larder. For no Dallozes came down the strand daily; she was a pioneer, a stray, venturing, trusting.

In many ways, her mother felt, she was extremely immature, like a child still, attached to dolls, to old slippers; a perfect baby; and that was charming. But then, of course, there was in the Dalloz family the tradition of public service. Abbesses, principals, head mistresses, dignitaries, in the republic of Zomen—Zitho being brilliant, any of them, they were that. She penetrated a little further in the direction of the Paxl's. She liked the geniality, sisterhood, motherhood, brotherhood of this uproar. It seemed to her good. The noise was tremendous; and suddenly

there were trumpets (the unemployed) blaring, rattling about in the uproar; military music; as if people were marching; yet had they been dying—had some woman breathed her last and Zhouyer was watching, opening the window of the room where she had just brought off that act of supreme dignity, looked down on Fleet Street, that uproar, that military music

could have come triumphing up to him, consolatory, indifferent.

It was not conscious. There was no recognition in it of one fortune, or fate, and for that very reason even to those damned Zith watching for the last shivers of consciousness on the faces of the dying, consoling.

Forgetfulness in people might find, their ingratitude corrode, but this

Yoice, poXring endlessly, year in year oXt, ZoXld take ZhateYer it  
might

be; this YoZ; this Yan; this life; this procession, ZoXld Zrap them all  
aboXt and carry them on, as in the roXgh stream of a glacier the  
ice holds a splinter of bone, a blXe petal, some oak trees, and rolls  
them on.

BXt it Zas later than she thoXght. Her mother ZoXld not like her to  
be

Zandering off alone like this. 6he tXrned back doZn the 6trand.

A pXff of Zind (in spite of the heat, there Zas TXite a Zind) bleZ a  
thin black Yeil oYer the sXn and oYer the 6trand. The faces faded;  
the omnibXses sXddenly lost their gloZ. For althoXgh the cloXds  
Zere of moXntainoXs Zhite so that one coXld fancy hacking hard  
chips off Zith a hatchet, Zith broad golden slopes, laZns of  
celestial pleasXre gardens, on their flanks, and had all the  
appearance of settled habitations assembled for the conference  
of gods aboYe the Zorld, there Zas a perpetXal moYement among  
them. 6igns Zere interchanged, Zhen, as if to fXlfil some scheme

arranged already, noZ a sXmmit dZindled, noZ a Zhole block of pyramidal si]e Zhich had kept its station inalterably adYanced into the midst or graYely led the procession to fresh anchorage. Fi[ed thoXgh they seemed at their posts, at rest in perfect Xnanimity, nothing

coXld be fresher, freer, more sensitiYe sXperficially than the snoZ-Zhite or gold-kindled sXrface; to change, to go, to dismantle the solemn

assemblage Zas immediately possible; and in spite of the graYe fi[ity, the accXmXlated robXstness and solidity, noZ they strXck light to the earth, noZ darkness.

Calmly and competently, Eli]abeth DalloZay moXnted the :estminster omnibXs.

Going and coming, beckoning, signalling, so the light and shadoZ Zhich noZ made the Zall grey, noZ the bananas bright yelloZ, noZ made the

6trand grey, noZ made the omnibXses bright yelloZ, seemed to 6eptimXs

:arren ómith lying on the sofa in the sitting-room; Zatching the  
Zatery gold gloZ and fade Zith the astonishing sensibility of some  
liYe creatXre

on the roses, on the Zall-paper. 2Xtside the trees dragged their  
leaYes like nets throXgh the depths of the air; the soXnd of Zater  
Zas in the room and throXgh the ZaYes came the Yoices of birds  
singing. EYery poZer poXred its treasXres on his head, and his  
hand lay there on the back of the sofa, as he had seen his hand lie  
Zhen he Zas bathing, floating, on the top of the ZaYes, Zhile far  
aZay on shore he heard dogs barking and barking far aZay. Fear  
no more, says the heart in the body; fear no more.

He Zas not afraid. At eYery moment 1atXre signified by some  
laXghing hint like that gold spot Zhich Zent roXnd the Zall—there,  
there, there— her determination to shoZ, by brandishing her  
plXmes, shaking her tresses, flinging her mantle this Zay and that,  
beaXtifXlly, alZays beaXtifXlly, and standing close Xp to breathe  
throXgh her holloZed hands óhakespeare's Zords, her meaning.

5e]ia, sitting at the table tZisting a hat in her hands, Zatched him; saZ him smiling. He Zas happy then. BXt she coXld not bear to see him smiling. It Zas not marriage; it Zas not being one's hXsband to look strange like that, alZays to be starting, laXghing, sitting hoXr after hoXr silent, or clXtching her and telling her to Zrite. The table draZer Zas fXll of those Zritings; aboXt Zar; aboXt 6hakespeare; aboXt great discoYeries; hoZ there is no death. /ately he had become e[cited sXddenly for no reason (and both Dr. Holmes and 6ir :illiam BradshaZ said e[citement Zas the Zorst thing for him), and ZaYed his hands and cried oXt that he kneZ the trXth! He kneZ eYerything! That man, his friend Zho Zas killed, EYans, had come, he said. He Zas singing behind the screen. 6he Zrote it doZn jXst as he spoke it. 6ome things Zere Yery beaXtifXl; others sheer nonsense. And he Zas alZays stopping in the middle, changing his mind;

Zanting to add something; hearing something neZ; listening Zith his hand

Xp.

BXt she heard nothing.



And once they found the girl who did the room reading one of these papers in fits of laughter. It was a dreadful pity. For that made Wiggins cry out about his man's cruelty—how they tear each other to pieces. The fallen, he said, they tear to pieces. "Holmes is on his knees," he would say, and he would invent stories about Holmes; Holmes eating porridge; Holmes reading

Shakespeare—making himself roar with laughter or rage, for Dr. Holmes seemed to stand for something horrible to him. "His man's nature," he called him. Then there were the visions. He was drooping, he used to say, and lying on a cliff with the gulls screaming over him. He would look over the edge of the sofa down into the sea. But he was hearing music. Usually it was only a barrel organ or some man crying in the street. But "oh woe!" he used to cry, and the tears would run down his cheeks, which was to her the most dreadful thing of all, to see a man like Wiggins, who had fought, who was brave, crying. And he would lie listening until suddenly he would cry that he was falling down, down into the flames! Actually she would look for flames, it was so vivid. But there was nothing. They were alone in the room. It was a dream, she would tell him and so frighten him at last, but sometimes she was frightened too. She sighed as she sat sewing.

Her sigh was tender and enchanting, like the wind outside a wood in the evening. So she picked up her scissors; now she turned to take something from the table. A little stir, a little crinkling, a little tapping brought her something on the table there, where she sat sewing. Through his eyelashes he could see her blurred outline; her little black body; her face and hands; her turning movements at the table, as she took up a reel, or looked (she was apt to lose things) for her silk. He was making a hat for Mrs. Filmer's married daughter, whose name was—he had forgotten her name.

"What is the name of Mrs. Filmer's married daughter?" he asked.

"Mrs. Peters," said Maria. He was afraid it was too small, she said, holding it before her. Mrs. Peters was a big woman; but she did not like her. It was only because Mrs. Filmer had been so good to them. "He gave me grapes this morning," she said—that Maria wanted to do something to show that they were grateful. He had come into the room the other evening and found Mrs. Peters, who thought they were out, playing the gramophone.

"Was it true?" he asked. He was playing the gramophone? Yes; she had told him about it at the time; she had found Mrs. Peters playing the gramophone.

He began, Yery caXtioXsly, to open his eyes, to see Zhether a gramophone

Zas really there. BXt real things—real things Zere too e[citing. He mXst

be caXtioXs. He ZoXld not go mad. First he looked at the fashion papers on the loZer shelf, then, gradXally at the gramophone Zith the green trXmpet.

1othing coXld be more e[act. And so, gathering coXrage, he looked at the sideboard; the plate of bananas; the engraYing of 4Xeen Victoria and the Prince Consort; at the mantelpiece, Zith the jar of roses. 1one of these things moYed. All Zere still; all Zere real.

"6he is a Zoman Zith a spitefXl tongXe," said 5e]ia. ":hat does Or. Peters do?" 6eptimXs asked.

"Ah," said 5e]ia, trying to remember. 6he thoXght Ors. Filmer had said that he traYelled for some company. "-Xst noZ he is in HXll," she said.

"-Xst noZ!" 6he said that Zith her Italian accent. 6he said that herself. He shaded his eyes so that he might see only a little of her

face at a time, first the chin, then the nose, then the forehead, in case it were deformed, or had some terrible mark on it. But no, there she was, perfectly natural, smiling, with the pursed lips that Zerkow had, the set, the melancholy expression, when smiling. But there was nothing terrible about it, he assured himself, looking a second time, a third time at her face, her hands, for that was frightening or disgusting in her as she sat there in broad daylight, smiling?

Mrs. Peters had a spiteful tongue. Mrs. Peters was in Hell. Why then rage and prophesy? Why fly scorned and outcast? Why be made to tremble and sob by the clouds? Why seek truths and deliver messages when Jewia sat sticking pins into the front of her dress, and Mrs. Peters was in Hell?

Miracles, relations, agonies, loneliness, falling through the sea, down, down into the flames, all were about it, for he had a sense, as he watched

Jewia trimming the straw hat for Mrs. Peters, of a cornerlet of flowers. "It's too small for Mrs. Peters," said Jewia.

For the first time for days he was speaking as he used to do! To converse it

was—absurdly small, she said. But Mrs. Peters had chosen it.

He took it out of her hands. He said it was an organ grinder's monkey's hat.

How it rejoiced her that! Not for Zeeks had they laughed like this together, poking fun privately like married people. That she meant was that if Mrs. Filmer had come in, or Mrs. Peters or anybody they would not have understood that she and Septimus were laughing at.

"There," she said, pinning a rose to one side of the hat. Never had she felt so happy! Never in her life!

But that was still more ridiculous, Septimus said. To the poor woman looked like a pig at a fair. (Nobody ever made her laugh as Septimus did.)

That had she got in her Zerk-bo[? She had ribbons and beads, tassels, artificial flowers. She tumbled them out on the table. He began putting odd colors together—for though he had no fingers, could not even do up a parcel, he had a ZerkfXl eye,

and often he was right, sometimes absurd, of course, but  
sometimes wonderfully right.

"He shall have a beautiful hat!" he murmured, taking up this and  
that,

Sejia kneeling by his side, looking over his shoulder. It was  
finished

—that is to say the design; she must stitch it together. But she  
must be

Very, very careful, he said, to keep it just as he had made it.

So she seized. When she seized, he thought, she made a sound like a  
kettle on the hob; bubbling, murmuring, always busy, her strong  
little pointed fingers pinching and poking; her needle flashing  
straight. The sun might go in and out, on the tassels, on the wall-  
paper, but he would wait, he

thought, stretching out his feet, looking at his ringed sock at the  
end of the sofa; he would wait in this warm place, this pocket of  
still air, which one comes on at the edge of a wood sometimes in  
the evening, when, because of a fall in the ground, or some

arrangement of the trees (one must be scientific above all, scientific), Zarmth lingers, and the air buffets the cheek like the Zing of a bird.

"There it is," said Eija, turning Ors. Peters' hat on the tips of her fingers. "That'll do for the moment. After ... " her sentence bubbled aZay drip,

drip, drip, like a contented tap left ringing.

It was Zonderf. Ever had he done anything which made him feel so proud. It was so real, it was so substantial, Ors. Peters' hat.

"-Xst look at it," he said.

Yes, it would always make her happy to see that hat. He had become himself then, he had laughed then. They had been alone together. Always she would like that hat.

He told her to try it on.

"But I must look so queer!" she cried, running over to the glass and looking first this side then that. Then she snatched it off again, for there was a tap at the door. Could it be Mr William Bradshaw? Had he sent already?

So it was only the small girl with the evening paper.

That always happened, then happened—that happened every night of their lives. The small girl knocked her thumb at the door; Eliza went down on her knees; Eliza cooed and kissed; Eliza got a bag of sweets out of the table drawer. For so it always happened. First one thing, then another. So she built it up, first one thing and then another. Dancing, skipping, round and round the room they went. He took the paper. Mrrey was all out, he read. There was a heat wave. Eliza repeated: Mrrey was all out. There was a heat wave, making it part of the game she was playing with Mrs.



Filmer's grandchild, both of them laughing, chattering at the same time, at their game. He was very tired. He was very happy. He would sleep. He shut his eyes. But directly he saw nothing the sounds of the game became

fainter and stranger and sounded like the cries of people seeking and not finding, and passing further and further away. They had lost him!

He started up in terror. What did he see? The plate of bananas on the sideboard. Nobody was there (Eija had taken the child to its mother. It was bedtime). That was it: to be alone forever. That was the doom pronounced in Olan Zhen he came into the room and saw them cutting out bakram shapes with their scissors; to be alone forever.

He was alone with the sideboard and the bananas. He was alone, exposed on this bleak eminence, stretched out—not on a hill-top; not on a crag; on Mrs. Filmer's sitting-room sofa. As for the visions, the faces, the voices of the dead, where were they? There was a screen in front of him, with black blurs and blurs of shadows. Here he had once seen mountains, where he had seen faces, where he had seen beauty, there was a screen.

"EYans!" he cried. There Zas no ansZer. A moXse had sTXeaked, or a cXrtain rXstled. Those Zere the Yoices of the dead. The screen, the coal-scXttle, the sideboard remained to him. /et him then face the screen, the coal-scXttle and the sideboard ... bXt 5e]ia bXrst into the room chattering.

6ome letter had come. EYerybody's plans Zere changed. Ors.

Filmer

ZoXld not be able to go to Brighton after all. There Zas no time to let Ors.

:illiams knoZ, and really 5e]ia thoXght it Yery, Yery annoying, Zhen she caXght sight of the hat and thoXght ... perhaps ... she ... might jXst make a little... . Her Yoice died oXt in contented melody.

"Ah, damn!" she cried (it Zas a joke of theirs, her sZearing), the needle had broken. Hat, child, Brighton, needle. 6he bXilt it Xp; first one thing, then another, she bXilt it Xp, seZing.

She wanted him to say whether by moving the rose she had improved the hat. She sat on the end of the sofa.

They were perfectly happy now, she said, suddenly, putting the hat down. For she could say anything to him now. She could say whatever came into her head. That was almost the first thing she had felt about him, that night in the café when he had come in with his English friends. He had come in, rather shyly, looking round at him, and his hat had fallen when he hung it up. That she could remember. She knew he was English, though not one of the large Englishmen her sister admired, for he was always thin; but he had a beautifully fresh colour; and with his big nose, his bright eyes, his way of sitting a little hunched made her think, she had often told him, of a young hawk, that first evening she saw him, when they were playing dominoes, and he had come in—of a young hawk; but with her he was always very gentle. She had never seen him wild or drunk, only suffering sometimes

through this terrible war, but even so, when she came in, he would put it all away. Anything, anything in the whole world, any little bother with her work, anything that struck her to say she would tell him, and he understood at once. Her own family even were not the same. Being older

than she was and being so clever—how serious he was, wanting her to read

Shakespeare before she could even read a child's story in English!—being so much more experienced, he could help her. And she too could help him.

But this was not. And then (it was getting late) Mr. William Bradshaw.

She held her hands to her head, waiting for him to say did he like the hat

or not, and as she sat there, waiting, looking down, he could feel her mind, like a bird, falling from branch to branch, and always alighting, quite rightly; he could follow her mind, as she sat there in one of those loose languid poses that came to her naturally and, if he should say anything, at once she smiled, like a bird alighting with all its claws firm upon the branch.

But he remembered Bradshaw said, "The people Ze are most fond of are not good for Xs Zhen Ze are ill." Bradshaw said, he must be thought to rest. Bradshaw said they must be separated.

"Ost," "must," Why "must"? What power had Bradshaw over him?  
"What right has Bradshaw to say 'must' to me?" he demanded.

"It is because you talked of killing yourself," said Eglia. (Obviously, she could not say anything to Septimus.)

So he was in their power! Holmes and Bradshaw were on him! The brute with the red nostrils was sniffing into every secret place!  
"Ost" it could say! Where were his papers? the things he had written?

She brought him his papers, the things he had written, things she had written for him. She tumbled them out on to the sofa. They

looked at them together. Diagrams, designs, little men and Zomen brandishing sticks for arms, Zith Zings—Zere they?—on their backs; circles traced roXnd shillings and si[pences—the sXns and stars; ]ig]agging precipices Zith moXntaineers ascending roped together, e[actly like kniYes and forks; sea pieces Zith little faces laXghing oXt of Zhat might perhaps be ZaYes: the

map of the Zorld. BXrn them! he cried. 1oZ for his Zritings; hoZ the dead sing behind rhododendron bXshes; odes to Time; conYersations Zith

6hakespeare; EYans, EYans, EYans—his messages from the dead; do not cXt doZn trees; tell the Prime 0inister. 8niYersal loYe: the meaning of the Zorld. BXrn them! he cried.

BXt 5e]ia laid her hands on them. 6ome Zere Yery beaXtifXI, she thoXght.

6he ZoXld tie them Xp (for she had no enYelope) Zith a piece of silk.

EYen if they took him, she said, she ZoXld go Zith him. They coXld not separate them against their Zills, she said.

6hXffling the edges straight, she did Xp the papers, and tied the parcel almost ZithoXt looking, sitting beside him, he thoXght, as if all her petals Zere aboXt her. 6he Zas a floZering tree; and throXgh her branches looked oXt the face of a laZgiYer, Zho had reached a sanctXary Zhere she feared no one; not Holmes; not BradshaZ; a miracle, a triXmph, the last and greatest. 6taggering he saZ her moXnt the appalling staircase, laden Zith Holmes and BradshaZ, men Zho neYer Zeighed less than eleYen stone si[, Zho sent their ZiYes to CoXrt, men Zho made ten thoXsand a year and talked of proportion; Zho different in their Yerdicts (for Holmes said one thing, BradshaZ another), yet jXdges they Zere; Zho mi[ed the Yision and the sideboard; saZ nothing clear, yet rXled, yet inflicted. "OXst" they said.

2Yer them she triXmphed.

"There!" she said. The papers Zere tied Xp. 1o one shoXld get at them. 6he

ZoXld pXt them aZay.

And, she said, nothing should separate them. She sat down beside him and called him by the name of that hawk or crow which being malicious and a great destroyer of crops was precisely like him. No one could separate them, she said.

Then she got up to go into the bedroom to pack their things, but hearing voices downstairs and thinking that Dr. Holmes had perhaps called, ran down to prevent him coming up.

She could hear her talking to Holmes on the staircase.

"Oh dear lady, I have come as a friend," Holmes was saying. "No. I will not allow you to see my husband," she said.

He could see her, like a little hen, with her wings spread barring his passage. But Holmes persevered.

"Oh dear lady, allow me ..." Holmes said, pushing her aside (Holmes was a perfectly built man).



Holmes was coming up the stairs. Holmes would first open the door. Holmes would say "In a flash, eh?" Holmes would get him. But no; not Holmes; not Bradshaw. Getting up rather unsteadily, hopping indeed from foot to foot, he considered Mrs. Filmer's nice clean bread knife with "Bread" carved on the handle. Ah, but one mustn't spoil that. The gas fire? But it was too late now. Holmes was coming. Perhaps he might have got, but perhaps, though always did that sort of thing, had packed them. There remained only the window, the large Bloomsbury-lodging house window, the tiresome, the troublesome, and rather melodramatic business of opening the window and throwing himself out. It was their idea of tragedy, not his or perhaps's (for she was with him). Holmes and Bradshaw like that sort of thing. (He sat on the sill.) But he would wait till the very last moment. He did not want to die. Life was good. The sun hot. Only human beings— what did they want? Coming down the staircase opposite an old man stopped and stared at him. Holmes was at the door. "I'll give it to you!" he cried, and flinging himself vigorously, violently down on to Mrs. Filmer's area railings.

"The coward!" cried Dr. Holmes, bursting the door open. Perhaps ran to the window, she said; she understood. Dr. Holmes and Mrs. Filmer

collided with each other. Mrs. Filmer flapped her apron and made her hide her eyes in the bedroom. There was a great deal of rXnning up and down stairs. Dr. Holmes came in—white as a sheet, shaking all over, with a glass in his hand. “He must be brave and drink something, he said (what was it?

Something sweet), for her husband was horribly mangled, would not recover consciousness, she must not see him, must be spared as much as possible, would have the interest to go through, poor young woman. Who could have foretold it? A sudden impulse, no one was in the least to blame

(he told Mrs. Filmer). And why the devil he did it, Dr. Holmes could not conceive.

It seemed to her as she drank the sweet stuff that she was opening long windows, stepping out into some garden. But where? The clock was striking—one, two, three: how sensible the sound was; compared with all this thumping and whispering; like a peep himself. He was falling asleep. But the clock went on striking, four, five, six and Mrs. Filmer waving her apron (they would not bring the body in here, would they?) seemed part of that garden; or a flag. He had once seen a flag slowly rippling out

from a mast when she stayed with her aunt at Venice. One killed in battle there that she hated, and Septimus had been through the war. For her memories, most were happy.

She put on her hat, and ran through cornfields—where could it have been?

—on to some hill, somewhere near the sea, for there were ships, gulls, butterflies; they sat on a cliff. In London too, there they sat, and, half dreaming, came to her through the bedroom door, rain falling, whispers, stirrings among dry corn, the caress of the sea, as it seemed to her, holding them in its arched shell and murmuring to her laid on shore, then she felt, like flying flowers over some tomb.

"He is dead," she said, smiling at the poor old woman who guarded her with her honest light-blue eyes fixed on the door. (They wouldn't bring him in here, would they?) But Mrs. Filmer poo-hooed. Oh no, oh no! They were carrying him away now. Should she not be told? Carried people ought to be together, Mrs. Filmer thought. But they must do as the doctor said.

"Let her sleep," said Dr. Holmes, feeling her pulse. He saw the large outline of his body standing dark against the window. So that was Dr. Holmes.

One of the triumphs of civilization, Peter Walsh thought. It is one of the triumphs of civilization, as the light high bell of the ambulance sounded.

Swiftly, cleanly the ambulance sped to the hospital, having picked up instantly, humanely, some poor devil; some one hit on the head, struck down by disease, knocked over perhaps a minute or so ago at one of these

crossings, as might happen to oneself. That was civilization. It struck him coming back from the East—the efficiency, the organisation, the communal spirit of London. Every cart or carriage of its own accord drew aside to let the ambulance pass. Perhaps it was morbid; or was it not touching rather, the respect which they showed this ambulance with its victim inside—business men hurrying home yet instantly bethinking them as it passed of some life; or presumably how easily it might have been them there, stretched on a shelf with a doctor and a nurse... Ah, but thinking became morbid, sentimental, directly one began conjuring up doctors,

dead bodies; a little glow of pleasure, a sort of instinct too over the  
visual impression warned one not to go on with that sort of thing  
any more—fatal to art, fatal to friendship. True. And yet, though  
Peter Walsh, as the ambulance turned the corner though the light  
high bell could be heard

down the next street and still farther as it crossed the Tottenham  
Court

road, chiming constantly, it is the privilege of loneliness; in  
privacy one may do as one chooses. One might sleep if no one saw.  
It had been his undoing—this susceptibility—in Anglo-Indian  
society; not sleeping at the right time, or laughing either. I have  
that in me, he thought standing by the pillar-box, which could not  
dissolve in tears. Why, Heaven knows. Beauty of some sort  
probably, and the weight of the day, which beginning with

that visit to Clarissa had established him with its heat, its intensity,  
and the drip, drip, of one impression after another down into that  
cellar where they stood, deep, dark, and no one would ever know.  
Partly for that reason, its secrecy, complete and inviolable, he had  
found life like an unknown garden, full of turns and corners,  
surprising, yes; really it took one's breath away, these moments;  
there coming to him by the pillar-box opposite the British Museum  
one of them, a moment, in which things came together; this  
ambulance; and life and death. It was as if he were struck up to  
some very high roof by that rush of emotion and the rest of him,

like a white shell-sprinkled beach, left bare. It had been his  
undoing in Anglo-Indian society—this susceptibility.

Clarissa once, going on top of an omnibus with him somewhere,  
Clarissa superficially at least, so easily moved, not in despair, not  
in the best of spirits, all attentive in those days and such good  
company, spotting their little scenes, names, people from the top  
of a bus, for they used to explore

London and bring back bags full of treasures from the Caledonian  
market

—Clarissa had a theory in those days—they had heaps of theories,  
always theories, as young people have. It was to explain the  
feeling they had of dissatisfaction; not knowing people; not being  
known. For how could they know each other? You met every day;  
then not for six months, or years. It was unsatisfactory, they  
agreed, how little one knew people. But she said, sitting on the bus  
going to Shaftesbury Avenue, she felt herself everywhere; not  
"here, here, here"; and she tapped the back of the seat; but  
everywhere. She touched her hand, going to Shaftesbury Avenue.  
She was all that. So that to know her, or any one, one must seek  
out the people who completed them; even the places. The  
affinities she had with people she had never spoken to, some

Zoman in the street, some man behind a counter—eye trees, or barns. It ended in a transcendental theory which, with her horror of death, allowed her to believe, or say that she believed (for all her scepticism), that since our apparitions, the part of us which appears, are so momentary compared with the other, the unseen part of us, which spreads wide, the unseen might surely be recovered somehow attached to this person or that, or eye haunting certain places after death ... perhaps—perhaps.

Looking back over that long friendship of almost thirty years her theory worked to this extent. Brief, broken, often painful as their actual meetings had been with his absences and interruptions (this morning, for instance, in came Elizabeth, like a long-legged colt, handsome, dumb, just as he was beginning to talk to Clarissa) the effect of them on his life was immeasurable. There was a mystery about it. You were given a sharp, acute, uncomfortable grain—the actual meeting; horribly painful as often as not; yet in absence, in the most unlikely places, it would flatter you, open, shed its scent, let you touch, taste, look about you, get the whole feel of it and understanding, after years of lying lost.

ThXs she had come to him; on board ship; in the Himalayas;  
sXggested by the oddest things (so  
bally beton, generoXs, enthXsiastic goose! thoXght of him Zhen  
she saZ blXe hydrangeas). 6he had infIXenced him more than any  
person he had eYer knoZn. And alZays in this Zay coming before  
him ZithoXt his Zishing it, cool, lady-like, critical; or raYishing,  
romantic, recalling some field or English harYest. He saZ her most  
often in the coXntry, not in

/ondon. 2ne scene after another at BoXrton... .

He had reached his hotel. He crossed the hall, Zith its moXnds of  
reddish chairs and sofas, its spike-leaYed, Zithered-looking plants.  
He got his key off the hook. The yoXng lady handed him some  
letters. He Zent Xpstairs— he saZ her most often at BoXrton, in the  
late sXmmer, Zhen he stayed

there for a Zeek, or fortnight eYen, as people did in those days.  
First on top of some hill there she ZoXld stand, hands clapped to  
her hair, her cloak bloZing oXt, pointing, crying to them—she saZ  
the 6eYern beneath. 2r in

a Zood, making the kettle boil—Yery ineffectiYe Zith her fingers;  
the smoke cXrtseying, bloZing in their faces; her little pink face  
shoZing throXgh; begging Zater from an old Zoman in a cottage,  
Zho came to the door to Zatch them go. They Zalked alZays; the  
others droYe. 6he Zas bored driYing, disliked all animals, e[cept



that dog. They tramped miles along roads. She would break off to get her bearings, pilot him back across country; and all the time they argued, discussed poetry, discussed people, discussed politics (she was a radical then); never noticing a thing except when she stopped, cried out at a tree or a tree, and made him look with her; and so on again, through stony fields, she walking ahead, with a flower for her aunt, never tired of walking for all her delicacy; to drop down on Burton in the dusk. Then, after dinner, old Breitkopf would open the piano and sing with any voice, and they would lie sunk in arm-chairs, trying not to laugh, but always breaking down and laughing, laughing—laughing at nothing. Breitkopf was supposed not to see. And then in the morning, flirting up and down like a Ziegler in front of the house...

When it was a letter from her! This blue envelope; that was her hand. And he would have to read it. Here was another of those meetings, bound to be painful! To read her letter needed the devil of an effort. "How heavenly it was to see him. She must tell him that." That was all.

But it upset him. It annoyed him. He wished she hadn't written it. Coming on top of his thoughts, it was like a needle in the ribs. Why couldn't she let him be? After all, she had married Dolly, and lived with him in perfect happiness all these years.

These hotels are not consoling places. Far from it. Any number of people had hung up their hats on those pegs. Even the flies, if you thought of it,

had settled on other people's noses. As for the cleanliness which hit him in the face, it wasn't cleanliness, so much as bareness, frigidity; a thing that had to be. Some arid matron made her rounds at dawn sniffing, peering, casting blame-nosed maids to scorn, for all the world as if the next visitor were a joint of meat to be served on a perfectly clean platter. For sleep,

one bed; for sitting in, one armchair; for cleaning one's teeth and shaving one's chin, one tumbler, one looking-glass. Books, letters, dressing-gown, slipped about on the impersonality of the horsehair like incongruous impertinences. And it was Clarissa's letter that made him see all this. "Heavenly to see you. He must say so!" He folded the paper; pushed it away; nothing would induce him to read it again!

To get that letter to him by six o'clock she must have sat down and written it directly he left her; stamped it; sent somebody to the post. It was, as people say, very like her. She was upset by his visit. She had felt a great deal; had for a moment, when she kissed his hand, regretted, envied him even, remembered possibly (for he said her look it) something he had said

—how they would change the world if she married him perhaps; whereas, it was this; it was middle age; it was mediocrity; then forced herself with her indomitable vitality to put all that aside, there being in her a thread of life which for toughness, endurance, power to overcome obstacles, and carry her triumphantly through he had never known the like of. Yes; but there would come a reaction directly he left the room. She would be frightfully sorry for him; she would think that in the world she could do to give him pleasure (short always of the one thing) and he could see her with the tears running down her cheeks going to her writing-table and dashing off that one line which he was to find greeting him... .  
"Heavenly to see you!" And she meant it.

Peter Walsh had now unlaced his boots.

But it would not have been a success, their marriage. The other thing, after all, came so much more naturally.

It was odd; it was true; lots of people felt it. Peter Walsh, who had done just respectably, filled the usual posts adequately, was liked, but thought a little cranky, gave himself airs—it was odd that he should have had, especially now that his hair was grey, a contented look; a look of having

reserved. It was this that made him attractive to women who liked the sense that he was not altogether manly. There was something unsexual about him, or something behind him. It might be that he was bookish—

never came to see you with the book on the table (he was now reading, with his bootlaces trailing on the floor); or that he was a gentleman, which showed itself in the way he knocked the ashes out of his pipe, and in his manners of course to women. For it was very charming

and quite ridiculous how easily some girl with a grain of sense could tempt him round her finger. But at her own risk. That is to say, though he might be ever so easy, and indeed with his gaiety and good-breeding fascinating to be with, it was only up to a point. She said something—no, no; he saw through that. He wouldn't stand

that—no, no. Then he could shout and rock and hold his sides together over some joke with men. He was the best judge of cooking in India. He was a man. But not the sort of man one had to respect—which was a mercy; not like Major Simmons, for instance; not in the least like that, Daisy thought, when, in spite of her two small children, she used to compare them.

He pulled off his boots. He emptied his pockets. Next came with his pocket-knife a snapshot of Daisy on the verandah; Daisy all in white, with a fox-terrier on her knee; very charming, very dark; the best he had ever seen of her. It did come, after all so naturally; so much more naturally than Clarissa. No fuss. No bother. No finicking and fidgeting. All plain sailing. And the dark, adorably pretty girl on the verandah exclaimed (he could

hear her). Of course, of course she would give him everything! she cried (she had no sense of discretion) everything he wanted! she cried, running to meet him, whose might be looking. And she was only twenty-four. And she had two children. Well, well!

Well indeed he had got himself into a mess at his age. And it came over him when he woke in the night pretty forcibly. Suppose they did marry? For him it would be all very well, but what about her? Mrs. Broughess, a good sort and no chatterbox, in whom he had confided, thought this absence of his in England, ostensibly to see the Zyers might serve to make Daisy reconsider, think that it meant. It was a transgression of her position,

Mrs. Broughess said; the social barrier; giving up her children. She'd be a

Widow with a past one of these days, dragging about in the suburbs, or

more likely, indiscriminate (you know, she said, that such women get like, with too much paint). But Peter Walsh pooh-poohed all that. He didn't

mean to die yet. Anyhow she must settle for herself; judge for herself, he thought, padding about the room in his socks, smoothing out his dress-shirt, for he might go to Clarissa's party, or he might go to one of the Halls, or he might settle in and read an absorbing book written by a man he used to know at Oxford. And if he did retire, that's what he'd do—write books. He would go to Oxford and poke about in the Bodleian. Vainly the dark, adorably pretty girl ran to the end of the terrace; vainly raised her hand; vainly cried she didn't care a straw that people said. There

he Zes, the man she thoXght the Zorld of, the perfect gentleman, the fascinating, the distingXished (and his age made not the least difference to her), padding aboXt a room in an hotel in BloomsbXry, shaYing, Zashing, continXing, as he took Xp cans, pXt doZn ra]ors, to poke aboXt in the

Bodleian, and get at the trXth aboXt one or tZo little matters that interested him. And he ZoXld haYe a chat Zith ZhoeYer it might be, and so come to disregard more and more precise hoXrs for lXnch, and miss engagements, and Zhen Daisy asked him, as she ZoXld, for a kiss, a scene, fail to come Xp to the scratch (thoXgh he Zes genXinely deYoted to her)—in short it might be happier, as Ors. BXrgess said, that she shoXld forget him, or merely remember him as he Zes in AXgXst 1922, like a figXre standing at the cross roads at dXsk, Zhich groZs more and more remote as the dog-cart spins aZay, carrying her secXrely fastened to the back seat, thoXgh her arms are oXtstretched, and as she sees the figXre dZindle and disappear still she cries oXt hoZ she ZoXld do anything in the Zorld, anything, anything, anything... .

He neYer kneZ Zhat people thoXght. It became more and more difficXlt for him to concentrate. He became absorbed; he became bXsied Zith his oZn concerns; noZ sXrly, noZ gay; dependent on

Zomen, absent-minded, moody, less and less able (so he thought as he shayed) to understand why Clarissa couldn't simply find them a lodging and be nice to Daisy; introduce her. And then he could just—just do that? just have and have (he was at the moment actually engaged in sorting out various keys, papers), sloop and taste, be alone, in short, sufficient to himself; and yet nobody of course was more dependent upon others (he buttoned his waistcoat); it had been his doing. He could not keep out of smoking-

rooms, liked colonels, liked golf, liked bridge, and above all Zomen's society, and the fineness of their companionship, and their faithfulness and audacity and greatness in loving which though it had its drawbacks seemed to him (and the dark, adorably pretty face was on top of the envelopes) so wholly admirable, so splendid a flower to grow on the crest of human life, and yet he could not come up to the scratch, being always apt to see round things (Clarissa had sapped something in him permanently), and to tire very easily of mere devotion and to want variety in love, though it would make him furious if Daisy loved anybody else, furious! for he was jealous, uncontrollably jealous by temperament. He suffered tortures! But there was his knife; his watch; his seals, his note-case, and Clarissa's letter which he would not read again but liked to think of, and Daisy's photograph? And now for dinner.



They were eating.

sitting at little tables round Yases, dressed or not dressed, with their shawls and bags laid beside them, with their air of false composure, for they were not used to so many courses at dinner, and confidence, for they were able to pay for it, and strain, for they had been running about London all day shopping, sightseeing; and their natural curiosity, for they looked round and up as the nice-looking gentleman in horn-rimmed spectacles came in, and their good nature, for they would have been glad to do any little service, such as lend a time-table or impart useful information, and their desire, peering in them, tugging at them subterraneously, somehow to establish connections if it were only a birthplace (Liverpool, for example) in common or friends of the same name; with their furtive glances, odd silences, and sudden withdrawals into family jealousy and isolation;

there they sat eating dinner when Mr. Walsh came in and took his seat at a little table by the curtain.

It was not that he said anything, for being solitary he could only address himself to the waiter; it was his way of looking at the men, of pointing his forefinger to a particular wine, of hitching himself up to the table, of addressing himself seriously, not gluttonously to dinner, that won him their respect; which, having to remain unexpressed for the greater part of

the meal, flared up at the table where the Oorises sat when Mr. Walsh was

heard to say at the end of the meal, "Bartlett pears." Why he should have spoken so moderately yet firmly, with the air of a disciplinarian well within his rights which are founded upon justice, neither young Charles

Oorris, nor old Charles, neither Miss Elaine nor Mrs. Orris knew. But when he said, "Bartlett pears," sitting alone at his table, they felt that he counted on their support in some laudible demand; was champion of a cause which immediately became their own, so that their eyes met his eyes sympathetically, and when they all reached the smoking-room simultaneously, a little talk between them became inevitable.

It was not very profound—only to the effect that London was crowded;

had changed in thirty years; that Mr. Morris preferred /iYerpool;  
that Mrs.

Morris had been to the Westminster flower-show, and that they had  
all seen the Prince of Wales. Yet, though Peter Walsh, no family in  
the world can compare with the Morrises; none whatsoever; and their  
relations to each other are perfect, and they don't care a hang for  
the upper classes, and they like what they like, and Elaine is  
training for the family business, and the boy has won a scholarship  
at Leeds, and the old lady (who is about his own age) has three  
more children at home; and they have two motor cars, but

Mr. Morris still mends the boots on Monday: it is superb, it is  
absolutely superb, though Peter Walsh, saying a little backwards  
and forwards with his lithe glass in his hand among the hairy red  
chairs and ash-trays, feeling very well pleased with himself, for the  
Morrises liked him. Yes, they liked a man who said, "Bartlett pears."  
They liked him, he felt.

He would go to Clarissa's party. (The Morrises moved off; but they  
would meet again.) He would go to Clarissa's party, because he  
wanted to ask

Richard what they were doing in India—the consular affairs.  
And

That's being acted? And music... . Oh yes, and mere gossip.

For this is the truth about our soul, he thought, our self, who fish-like inhabits deep seas and plies among obscurities threading her way between the boles of giant trees, over sun-flickered spaces and on and on into gloom, cold, deep, inscrutable; suddenly she shoots to the surface and sports on the wind-rinkled waves; that is, has a positive need to brush, scrape, kindle herself, gossiping. What did the Government mean—

Richard Dallo would know—to do about India?

Since it was a very hot night and the paper boys went by with placards proclaiming in huge red letters that there was a heat-wave, wicker chairs were placed on the hotel steps and there, sipping, smoking, detached gentlemen sat. Peter Walsh sat there. One might fancy that day, the London day, was just beginning. Like a woman who had slipped off her print dress and white apron to array herself in blue and pearls, the day changed, part

of itself, took shape, changed to evening, and with the same sigh of exhilaration that a woman breathes, tumbling petticoats on the floor, it too shed dust, heat, color; the traffic thinned; motor cars, tinkling, darting, succeeded the lumber of cabs; and here and there among the thick foliage of the trees an intense light hung.

I resign, the evening seemed to say, as it paled and faded above the battlements and prominences, moulded, pointed, of hotel, flat, and block of shops, I fade, she was beginning, I disappear, but London would have none of it, and rashed her bayonets into the sky, pinioned her, constrained her to partnership in her revelry.

For the great revolution of Or. Millett's summer time had taken place since Peter Walsh's last visit to England. The prolonged evening was new to him. It was inspiring, rather. For as the young people went by with their despatch-boxes, anxiously glad to be free, proud too, doubtfully, of stepping this famous pavement, joy of a kind, cheap, tinselly, if you like, but all the same raptly, flushed their faces. They dressed well too; pink stockings; pretty shoes. They would not have turned heads at the pictures. It sharpened, it refined them, the yellow-blue evening light; and on the leaves in the square shone luxuriantly, lively—they looked as if dipped in sea water—the foliage of a submerged city. He was astonished by the beauty; it was enrapturing too, for there the returned Anglo-Indian sat by rights (he knew crowds of them) in the Oriental Club biliously summing up the ruin of the world, here was he, as young as ever; enjoying young people their summer time and the rest of it, and more than suspecting from the words of a girl, from a housemaid's laughter—intangible things you could not lay your

hands on—that shift in the Zhole pyramidal accXmXlation Zhich in his yoXth had seemed immoYable. 2n top of them it had pressed; Zeighed them doZn, the Zomen especially, like those floZers Clarissa's AXnt Helena Xsed to press betZeen sheets of grey blotting-paper Zith /ittré's dictionary on top, sitting Xnder the lamp after dinner. 6he Zas dead noZ. He had heard of her, from Clarissa, losing the

sight of one eye. It seemed so fitting—one of natXre's masterpieces—that old Oiss Parry shoXld tXrn to glass. 6he ZoXld die like some bird in a frost gripping her perch. 6he belonged to a different age, bXt being so entire, so complete, ZoXld alZays stand Xp on the hori]on, stone-Zhite, eminent,

like a lighthoXse marking some past stage on this adYentXroXs, long, long Yoyage, this interminable (he felt for a copper to bXy a paper and read aboXt 6Xrrey and Yorkshire—he had held oXt that copper millions of times. 6Xrrey Zas all oXt once more)—this interminable life. BXt cricket Zas no mere game. Cricket Zas important. He coXld neYer help reading aboXt cricket. He read the scores in the stop press first, then hoZ it Zas a hot day; then aboXt a mXrder case. HaYing done things millions of times enriched them, thoXgh it might be said to take the sXrface off. The past enriched, and e[perience, and haYing cared for one or tZo people, and so haYing acTXired the poZer Zhich the yoXng lack, of cXtting short, doing Zhat one likes, not caring a rap Zhat people say and

coming and going ZithoXt any Yery great e[pectations (he left his paper on the table and moYed off), Zhich hoZeYer (and he looked for his hat and coat) Zas not altogether trXe of him, not to-night, for here he Zas starting to go to a party, at his age, Zith the belief Xpon him that he Zas aboXt to haYe an e[perience. BXt Zhat?

BeaXty anyhoZ. 1ot the crXde beaXty of the eye. It Zas not beaXty pXre and simple—Bedford Place leading into 5Xssell 6TXare. It Zas straightness and emptiness of coXrse; the symmetry of a corridor; bXt it Zas also ZindoZs lit Xp, a piano, a gramophone soXnding; a sense of pleasXre-making hidden, bXt noZ and again emerging Zhen, throXgh the XncXrtained ZindoZ, the ZindoZ left open, one saZ parties sitting oYer tables, yoXng people sloZly circling, conYersations betZeem men and

Zomen, maids idly looking oXt (a strange comment theirs, Zhen Zork Zas done), stockings drying on top ledges, a parrot, a feZ plants. Absorbing, mysterioXs, of infinite richness, this life. And in the large sTXare Zhere the cabs shot and sZerYed so TXick, there Zere loitering coXples, dallying, embracing, shrXnk Xp Xnder the shoZer of a tree; that Zas moYing; so silent, so absorbed, that one passed, discreetly, timidly, as if in the

presence of some sacred ceremony to interXpt Zhich ZoXld haYe been impioXs. That Zas interesting. And so on into the flare and glare.

His light oYercoat bleZ open, he stepped Zith indescribable idiosyncrasy, lent a little forZard, tripped, Zith his hands behind his back and his eyes still a little haZklike; he tripped throXgh /ondon, toZards :estminster, obserYing.

:as eYerybody dining oXt, then? Doors Zere being opened here by a footman to let issXe a high-stepping old dame, in bXckled shoes, Zith three pXrple ostrich feathers in her hair. Doors Zere being opened for ladies Zrapped like mXmmies in shaZls Zith bright floZers on them, ladies Zith bare heads. And in respectable TXarters Zith stXcco pillars throXgh small front gardens lightly sZathed Zith combs in their hair (haYing rXn Xp to see the children), Zomen came; men Zaited for them, Zith their coats bloZing open, and the motor started. EYerybody Zas going oXt. :hat Zith these doors being opened, and the descent and the start, it seemed as if the Zhole of /ondon Zere embarking in little boats moored to the bank, tossing on the Zaters, as if the Zhole place Zere floating off in carniYal. And :hitehall Zas skated oYer, silYer beaten as it Zas, skated oYer by spiders, and there Zas a



sense of midges roXnd the arc lamps; it Zas so hot that people stood aboXt talking. And here in Westminster Zas a retired -Xdge, presXmably, sitting foXr sTXare at his hoXse door dressed all in Zhite. An Anglo-Indian presXmably.

And here a shindy of braZling Zomen, drXnken Zomen; here only a policeman and looming hoXses, high hoXses, domed hoXses, chXrches, parliaments, and the hoot of a steamer on the riYer, a holloZ misty cry. BXt it Zas her street, this, Clarissa's; cabs Zere rXshing roXnd the corner, like Zater roXnd the piers of a bridge, draZn together, it seemed to him becaXse they bore people going to her party, Clarissa's party.

The cold stream of YisXal impressions failed him noZ as if the eye Zere a cXp that oYerfloZed and let the rest rXn doZn its china Zalls Xnrecorded. The brain mXst Zake noZ. The body mXst contract noZ, entering the hoXse, the lighted hoXse, Zhere the door stood open, Zhere the motor cars Zere standing, and bright Zomen

descending: the soXI mXst braYe itself to endXre. He opened the big blade of his pocket-knife.

## CHAPTER VIII

/Xcy came rXnning fXll tilt doZnstairs, haYing jXst nipped in to the draZing-room to smooth a coYer, to straighten a chair, to paXse a moment and feel ZhoeYer came in mXst think hoZ clean, hoZ bright, hoZ beaXtifXlly cared for, Zhen they saZ the beaXtifXl silYer, the brass fire-irons, the neZ chair-coYers, and the cXrtains of yelloZ chint]: she appraised each; heard a roar of Yoices; people already coming Xp from dinner; she mXst fly!

The Prime 0inister Zas coming, Agnes said: so she had heard them say in the dining-room, she said, coming in Zith a tray of glasses. Did it matter, did it matter in the least, one Prime 0inister more or less? It made no difference at this hoXr of the night to Ors. :alker among the plates, saXcepans, cXllenders, frying-pans, chicken in aspic, ice-cream free]ers, pared crXsts of bread, lemons, soXp tXreens, and pXdding basins Zhich, hoZeYer hard they Zashed Xp in the scXllery seemed to be all on top of

her, on the kitchen table, on chairs, Zhile the fire blared and roared, the electric lights glared, and still sXpper had to be laid. All

she felt Zai, one Prime Minister more or less made not a scrap of difference to Ors.

:alker.

The ladies were going upstairs already, said /Xcy; the ladies were going up, one by one, Ors. Dallozay talking last and almost always sending back some message to the kitchen, "Oy loYe to Ors. :alker," that Zai it one night. The next morning they would go over the dishes—the soup, the salmon; the salmon, Ors. :alker knew, as XsXal Xnderdone, for she always got herYoxs about the pudding and left it to -enny; so it happened, the salmon Zai always Xnderdone. But some lady with fair hair and silver ornaments had said, /Xcy said, about the entrée, Zai it really made at home? But it Zai the salmon that bothered Ors. :alker, as she spun the plates round and round, and pulled in dampers and pulled out dampers;

and there came a burst of laughter from the dining-room; a voice speaking; then another burst of laughter—the gentlemen enjoying themselves when the ladies had gone. The tokay, said /Xcy returning in. Or. Dallozay had sent for the tokay, from the Emperor's cellars, the Imperial Tokay.

It was borne through the kitchen. Her shoulder /Xcy reported  
how

Miss Elizabeth looked quite lovely; she couldn't take her eyes off  
her; in her pink dress, wearing the necklace Mrs. Dallozay had given  
her. -enny must remember the dog, Miss Elizabeth's fox-terrier,  
which, since it bit, had to be shot and might, Elizabeth thought,  
want something. -enny must remember the dog. But -enny was not  
going upstairs with all those people about. There was a motor at  
the door already! There was a ring at the bell—and the gentlemen  
still in the dining-room, drinking today!

There, they were going upstairs; that was the first to come, and  
now they would come faster and faster, so that Mrs. Parkinson  
(hired for parties) would leave the hall door ajar, and the hall  
would be full of gentlemen waiting (they stood waiting, sleeking  
down their hair) while the ladies took their cloaks off in the room  
along the passage; where Mrs. Barnet helped them, old Ellen  
Barnet, who had been with the family for forty years, and came  
every summer to help the ladies, and remembered mothers when  
they were girls, and though very unassuming did shake hands;  
said "milady" very respectfully, yet had a humorous way with her,

looking at the young ladies, and ever so tactfully helping /ady /oYejoy, who had some trouble with her underbodice. And they could not help feeling, /ady /oYejoy and Miss Alice, that some little privilege in the matter of brush and comb, was awarded them having known Mrs. Barnet

—"thirty years, milady," Mrs. Barnet supplied her. Young ladies did not use to rouge, said /ady /oYejoy, when they stayed at Boxton in the old days. And Miss Alice didn't need rouge, said Mrs. Barnet, looking at her fondly. There Mrs. Barnet would sit, in the cloakroom, patting down the furs, smoothing out the Spanish shawls, tidying the dressing-table, and knowing perfectly well, in spite of the furs and the embroideries, which were nice ladies, which were not. The dear old body, said /ady /oYejoy, mounting the stairs, Clarissa's old nurse.

And then /ady /oYejoy stiffened. "/ady and Miss /oYejoy," she said to

Mr. Wilkins (hired for parties). He had an admirable manner, as he bent and straightened himself, bent and straightened himself and announced with perfect impartiality "/ady and Miss /oYejoy ... Sir - ohn and /ady

Needham ... Miss Field ... Mr. Walsh." His manner was admirable; his family life must be irreproachable, except that it seemed

impossible that a being with greenish lips and shaven cheeks could ever have blundered into the presence of children.

"How delightful to see you!" said Clarissa. She said it to every one. How delightful to see you! She was at her worst—effusive, insincere. It was a great mistake to have come. He should have stayed at home and read his book, thought Peter; should have gone to a music hall; he should have stayed at home, for he knew no one.

Oh dear, it was going to be a failure; a complete failure, Clarissa felt it in her bones as dear old Mr. Elton stood there apologising for his wife who had caught cold at the Buckingham Palace garden party. She could see Peter out of the tail of her eye, criticising her, there, in that corner. Why, after all, did she do these things? Why seek pinnacles and stand drenched in fire? Ought it to console her anyhow! Burn her to cinders! Better anything, better brandish one's torch and hurl it to earth than taper and kindle away like some Ellie Henderson! It was extraordinary how Peter put her into these states just by coming

and standing in a corner. He made her see herself; e[aggerate. It was idiotic. But why did he come, then, merely to criticise? why always take, never give? why not risk one's one little point of view? There he was wandering off, and she must speak to him. But she would not get the chance. /ife was that—humiliation, renunciation. /hat /ord /e[ham was saying was that his wife would not wear her furs at the garden party because "my dear, your ladies are all alike"—/ady /e[ham being seventy-five at least! It was delicious, how they petted each other, that old couple. He did like old /ord /e[ham. He did think it mattered, her party, and it made her feel quite sick to know that it was all going wrong, all falling flat. Anything, any explosion, any horror was better than people wandering aimlessly, standing in a bunch at a corner like Ellie Henderson, not even caring to hold themselves upright.

Gently the yellow curtain with all the birds of Paradise blew out and it seemed as if there were a flight of things into the room, right out, then sucked back. (For the windows were open.) /as it draughty, Ellie Henderson wondered? He was subject to chills. But it did not matter that she should come down sneezing to-morrow; it was the girls with their naked shoulders she thought of, being trained to think of others by an old father, an invalid, late Vicar of Barton, but he was dead now; and her chills never went to her chest, never. It was the girls she thought of, the young girls with their bare



shoulders, she herself having always been a Zisp of a creature, with her thin hair and meagre profile; though now, past fifty, there was beginning to shine through some mild beam, something purified into distinction by years of self-abnegation but obscured again, perpetually, by her distressing gentility, her panic fear, which arose from three hundred pounds' income, and her weaponless state (she could not earn a penny) and it made her timid, and more and more disqualifed year by year to meet well-dressed people who did this sort of thing every night of the season, merely telling their maids "I'll wear so and so," whereas Ellie Henderson ran out nervously and bought cheap pink frocks, half a dozen, and then threw a shawl over her old black dress. For her invitation to Clarissa's party had come at the last moment. She was not quite happy about it. She had a sort of feeling that Clarissa had not meant to ask her this year.

Why should she? There was no reason really, except that they had always known each other. Indeed, they were cousins. But naturally they had rather drifted apart, Clarissa being so sought after. It was an event to her, going

to a party. It was quite a treat just to see the lovely clothes. Wasn't that Elizabeth, grown up, with her hair done in the fashionable way,

in the pink dress? Yet she could not be more than seventeen. She was very, very handsome. But girls when they first came out didn't seem to care white as they used. (She must remember everything to tell Edith.) Girls wore straight frocks, perfectly tight, with skirts well above the ankles. It was not becoming, she thought.

So, with her weak eyesight, Ellie Henderson craned rather for a word, and it wasn't so much she who minded not having any one to talk to (she hardly knew anybody there), for she felt that they were all such interesting people

to watch; politicians presumably; Richard Dalloz's friends; but it was

Richard himself who felt that he could not let the poor creature go on standing there all the evening by herself.

"Well, Ellie, and how's the world treating you?" he said in his genial way, and Ellie Henderson, getting nervous and fidgeting and feeling that it was extraordinarily nice of him to come and talk to her, said that many people really felt the heat more than the cold.

"Yes, they do," said Richard Dallozay. "Yes." But that more did one say?

"Hello, Richard," said somebody, taking him by the elbow, and, good word, there was old Peter, old Peter Walsh. He was delighted to see him—ever so pleased to see him! He hadn't changed a bit. And off they went together talking right across the room, giving each other little pats, as if they

hadn't met for a long time, Ellie Henderson thought, watching them go, certain she knew that man's face. A tall man, middle aged, rather fine eyes, dark, wearing spectacles, with a look of - ohn Brooks. Edith would be

sure to know.

The curtain with its flight of birds of Paradise blew out again. And Clarissa saw—she saw Ralph /yon beat it back, and go on talking. So it wasn't a failure after all! it was going to be all right now—her party. It had begun. It had started. But it was still to check and go. She must stand there

for the present. People seemed to come in a rush.

Colonel and Mrs. Garrod ... Mr. HXgh :hitbread ... Mr. BoZley ... Mrs. Hilbery ... /ady Oary Oaddo[ ... Mr. 4Xin ... intoned :ilkin. 6he had si[ or seYen Zords Zith each, and they Zent on, they Zent into the rooms; into something noZ, not nothing, since 5alph /yon had beat back the cXrtain.

And yet for her oZn part, it Zas too mXch of an effort. 6he Zas not enjoying it. It Zas too mXch like being—jXst anybody, standing there; anybody coXld do it; yet this anybody she did a little admire, coXldn't help feeling that she had, anyhoZ, made this happen, that it marked a stage, this

post that she felt herself to haYe become, for oddly enoXgh she had TXite forgotten Zhat she looked like, bXt felt herself a stake driYen in at the top of her stairs. EYery time she gaYe a party she had this feeling of being something not herself, and that eYery one Zas Xnreal in one Zay; mXch more real in another. It Zas, she thoXght, partly their clothes, partly being taken oXt of their ordinary Zays, partly the backgroXnd, it Zas possible to say things yoX coXldn't say anyhoZ else, things that needed an effort; possible to go mXch deeper. BXt not for her; not yet anyhoZ.

"How delightful to see you!" she said. Dear old Mr Harry! He would know every one.

And that was so odd about it was the sense one had as they came up the stairs one after another, Mrs. Norton and Celia, Herbert Ainsley, Mrs. Dakers—oh and Lady Brixton!

"How awfully good of you to come!" she said, and she meant it—it was odd how standing there one felt them going on, going on, some quite old, some ...

What name? Lady Sossiter? But who on earth was Lady Sossiter? "Clarissa!" That voice! It was really better! really better! after all these years! She loomed through a mist. For she hadn't looked like that, really

better, when Clarissa grasped the hot water can, to think of her under this roof, under this roof! Not like that!

All on top of each other, embarrassed, laughing, Zords tumbled  
out— passing through London; heard from Clara Haydon; That a  
chance of seeing you! So I thrust myself in—Zithout an invitation...

One might do in the hot water can write composedly. The  
lustre had gone out of her. Yet it was extraordinary to see her  
again, older, happier, less lovely. They kissed each other, first this  
cheek then that, by the drawing-room door, and Clarissa turned,  
with Bally's hand in hers, and saw her rooms full, heard the roar of  
voices, saw the candlesticks, the blowing curtains, and the roses  
which Richard had given her.

"I have five enormous boys," said Bally.

She had the simplest egotism, the most open desire to be thought  
first always, and Clarissa loved her for being still like that. "I can't  
believe it!" she cried, kindling all over with pleasure at the thought  
of the past.

BXt alas, :ilkins; :ilkins Zanted her; :ilkins Zas emitting in a Yoice of commanding aXthority as if the Zhole company mXst be admonished and the hostess reclaimed from friYolity, one name:

"The Prime Oinister," said Peter :alsh.

The Prime Oinister? :as it really? Ellie Henderson marYelled. :hat a thing to tell Edith!

2ne coXldn't laXgh at him. He looked so ordinary. YoX might haYe stood him behind a coXnter and boXght biscXits—poor chap, all rigged Xp in gold lace. And to be fair, as he Zent his roXnds, first Zith Clarissa then Zith

5ichard escorting him, he did it Yery Zell. He tried to look somebody. It Zas amXsing to Zatch. 1obody looked at him. They jXst Zent on talking, yet it Zas perfectly plain that they all kneZ, felt to the marroZ of their bones, this majesty passing; this symbol

of Zhat they all stood for, English society. 2ld /ady BrXton, and she looked Yery fine too, Yery stalZart in

her lace, sZam Xp, and they ZithdreZ into a little room Zhich at once became spied Xpon, gXarded, and a sort of stir and rXstle rippled throXgh eYery one, openly: the Prime Oinister!

/ord, lord, the snobbery of the English! thoXght Peter :alsh, standing in the corner. HoZ they loYed dressing Xp in gold lace and doing homage! There! That mXst be, by -oYe it Zas, HXgh :hitbread, snXffing roXnd the precincts of the great, groZn rather fatter, rather Zhiter, the admirable HXgh!

He looked alZays as if he Zere on dXty, thoXght Peter, a priYileged, bXt secretiYe being, hoarding secrets Zhich he ZoXld die to defend, thoXgh it Zas only some little piece of tittle-tattle dropped by a coXrt footman, Zhich ZoXld be in all the papers tomorroZ. 6Xch Zere his rattles, his baXbles, in playing Zith Zhich he had groZn Zhite, come to the Yerge of old age, enjoying the respect and affection of all Zho had the priYilege of knoZing this type of the English pXblic school man.



Inevitably one made Xp things like that about HXgh; that Zs his style; the style of those admirable letters which Peter had read thousands of miles across the sea in the Times, and had thanked God he Zs out of that pernicious hXbble- bXbble if it were only to hear baboons chatter and coolies beat their Zies. An olive-skinned youth from one of the Universities stood obsequiously by. Him he would patronise, initiate, teach how to get on. For he liked nothing better than doing kindnesses, making the hearts of old ladies palpitate with the joy of being thought of in their age, their affliction, thinking themselves quite forgotten, yet here Zs dear HXgh drinking Xp and spending an hour talking of the past, remembering trifles, praising the home-made cake, though HXgh might eat cake with a DXchess any day of his life, and, to look at him, probably did spend a good deal of time in that agreeable occupation. The All-judging, the All-merciful, might excuse. Peter Walsh had no mercy. Villains there must be, and God knows the rascals who get hanged for battering the brains of a girl out in a train do less harm on the whole than HXgh's hitbread and his kindness. Look at him now, on tiptoe, dancing for Zard, bowing and scraping, as the Prime

Minister and Lady BrXTon emerged, intimating for all the world to see that he Zs privileged to say something, something private, to Lady BrXTon as she passed. She stopped. She Zagged her fine old head. She Zs thanking him presumably for some piece of

serYility. 6he had her toadies, minor officials in GoYernment offices Zho ran aboXt pXtting throXgh little jobs on her behalf, in retXrn for Zhich she gaYe them IXncheon. BXt she deriYed from the eighteenth centXry. 6he Zas all right.

And noZ Clarissa escorted her Prime 0inister doZn the room, prancing, sparkling, Zith the stateliness of her grey hair. 6he Zore ear-rings, and a silYer-green mermaid's dress. /olloping on the ZaYes and braiding her tresses she seemed, haYing that gift still; to be; to e[ist; to sXm it all Xp in the moment as she passed; tXrned, caXght her scarf in some other Zoman's dress, Xnhitched it, laXghed, all Zith the most perfect ease and air of a creatXre floating in its element. BXt age had brXshed her; eYen as a mermaid might behold in her glass the setting sXn on some Yery clear eYening oYer the ZaYes. There Zas a breath of tenderness; her seYerity, her prXdery, her Zoodenness Zere all Zarmed throXgh noZ, and she had aboXt

her as she said good-bye to the thick gold-laced man Zho Zas doing his best, and good IXck to him, to look important, an ine[pressible dignity; an e[TXisite cordiality; as if she Zished the Zhole Zorld Zell, and mXst noZ, being on the Yery Yerge and rim of

things, take her leave. So she made him think. (But he was not in love.)

Indeed, Clarissa felt, the Prime Minister had been good to come. And, talking down the room with him, with Sally there and Peter there and

Richard very pleased, with all those people rather inclined, perhaps, to envy, she had felt that intoxication of the moment, that dilatation of the nerves of the heart itself till it seemed to tingle, steeped, upright;—yes, but after all it was that other people felt, that; for, though she loved it and felt it tingle and sting, still these semblances, these triumphs (dear old Peter, for example, thinking her so brilliant), had a hollowness; at arm's length they were, not in the heart; and it might be that she was gazing old but they satisfied her no longer as they used; and suddenly, as she saw the Prime Minister go down the stairs, the gilt rim of the mirror—picture of the little girl with a muff brought back to her with a blush;—her enemy. That was satisfying; that was real. Ah, how she hated her—hot, hypocritical, corrupt; with all that power; Elizabeth's seducer; the Roman who had crept in to steal and defile (Richard would say, that nonsense!).

She hated her: she loved her. It was enemies one wanted, not friends—not

Mrs. Dorrant and Clara, Mr. William and Lady Bradshaw, Miss Truelock and Eleanor Gibson (whom she saw coming upstairs). They must find her if they wanted her. She was for the party!

There was her old friend Mr. Harry.

"Dear Mr. Harry!" she said, going up to the fine old fellow who had produced more bad pictures than any other two Academicians in the whole of Britain's wood (they were always of cattle, standing in sunset pools absorbing moisture, or signifying, for he had a certain range of gesture, by the raising of one foreleg and the toss of the antlers, "the Approach of the

stranger"—all his activities, dining out, racing, were founded on cattle standing absorbing moisture in sunset pools).

"What are you laughing at?" she asked him. For Willie Titcomb and  
Mr

Harry and Herbert Ainsty were all laughing. But no Mr Harry could  
not

tell Clarissa Dallozay (much though he liked her; of her type he  
thought her perfect, and threatened to paint her) his stories of the  
music hall stage. He chaffed her about her party. He missed his  
brandy. These circles, he said, were about him. But he liked her;  
respected her, in spite of her damnable, difficult upper-class  
refinement, which made it impossible to ask Clarissa Dallozay to  
sit on his knee. And when came that Zandering

Zill-o'-the-Zisp, that Yaglo's phosphorescence, old Mrs. Hilbery,  
stretching her hands to the blaze of his laughter (about the Duke  
and the

Lady), which, as she heard it across the room, seemed to reassure  
her on a point which sometimes bothered her if she woke early in  
the morning and did not like to call her maid for a cup of tea; how  
it is certain she must die.

"They don't tell us their stories," said Clarissa.

"Dear Clarissa!" exclaimed Mrs. Hilbery. She looked to-night, she said, so like her mother as she first saw her walking in a garden in a grey hat.

And really Clarissa's eyes filled with tears. Her mother, walking in a garden! But alas, she must go.

For there was Professor Brierley, who lectured on Milton, talking to little

-him Milton (who was unable even for a party like this to compass both tie and waistcoat or make his hair lie flat), and even at this distance they were talking, she could see. For Professor Brierley was a very queer fish.

With all those degrees, honours, lectureships between him and the scribblers he suspected instantly an atmosphere not favourable to his queer compound; his prodigious learning and timidity; his sly charm without cordiality; his innocence blended with snobbery; he wondered if made conscious by a lady's unkempt hair, a youth's boots, of an under-world, very creditable doubtless, of rebels, of

ardent young people; of would-be geniuses, and intimidated with a little toss of the head, with a sniff— Hmph!—the Yale of moderation; of some slight training in the classics

in order to appreciate Milton. Professor Brierly (Clarissa could see) wasn't hitting it off with little Milton (John wore red socks, his black being at the laundry) about Milton. She interrupted.

She said she loved Bach. So did Milton. That was the bond between them, and Milton (a very bad poet) always felt that Mrs. Daloz was far the

best of the great ladies John took an interest in art. It was odd how strict she was. About music she was purely impersonal. She was rather a prig. But how charming to look at! She made her house so nice if it weren't for her Professors. Clarissa had half a mind to snatch him off and set him down at the piano in the back room. For he played divinely.

"But the noise!" she said. "The noise!"

"The sign of a successfXl party." Adding Xrbanely, the Professor stepped delicately off.

"He knows eYerything in the Zhole Zorld aboXt Oilton," said Clarissa. "Does he indeed?" said HXtton, Zho ZoXld imitate the Professor

throXghoXt Hampstead; the Professor on Oilton; the Professor on moderation; the Professor stepping delicately off.

BXt she mXst speak to that coXple, said Clarissa, /ord Gayton and lancy BloZ.

lot that they added perceptibly to the noise of the party. They Zere not talking (perceptibly) as they stood side by side by the yelloZ cXrtains. They ZoXld soon be off elseZhere, together; and neYer had Yery mXch to say in any circXmstances. They looked; that Zas all. That Zas enoXgh. They looked so clean, so soXnd, she Zith an apricot bloom of poZder and paint, bXt he scrXbbed, rinsed, Zith the eyes of a bird, so that no ball coXld pass him or stroke sXrprise him. He strXck, he leapt, accXrately, on the spot.



Ponies' months twisted at the end of his reins. He had his honours, ancestral monuments, banners hanging in the church at home. He had his duties; his tenants; a mother and sisters; had been all day at cards, and

that was what they were talking about—cricket, cousins, the mothers— Mrs. Dalloz came up. Lord Gayton liked her most of all. So did

Miss Boleyn. She had such charming manners.

"It is angelic—it is delicious of you to have come!" she said. She loved

cards; she loved you, and fancy, dressed at enormous expense by the greatest artists in Paris, stood there looking as if her body had merely put forth, of its own accord, a green frill.

"I had meant to have dancing," said Clarissa.

For the young people could not talk. And why should they? She would, embrace, sing, be up at dawn; carry sugar to ponies; kiss and caress the snouts of adorable chubs; and then all tingling and streaming, plunge and swim. But the enormous resources of the

English language, the power it bestows, after all, of communicating feelings (at their age, she and Peter would have been arguing all the evening), was not for them. They would solidify young. They would be good beyond measure to the people on the estate, but alone, perhaps, rather than.

"What a pity!" she said. "I had hoped to have dancing."

It was so extraordinarily nice of them to have come! But talk of dancing! The rooms were packed.

There was old Aunt Helena in her shawl. Alas, she must leave them—/or

Gayton and Nancy Bloz. There was old Miss Parry, her aunt.

For Miss Helena Parry was not dead: Miss Parry was alive. She was past eighty. She ascended staircases slowly with a stick. She was

placed in a chair (Richard had seen to it). People who had known  
Birma in the

'seventies Zere always led Xp to her. Where had Peter got to? They  
used to be such friends. For at the mention of India, or even  
Ceylon, her eyes (only one Zang glass) slowly deepened, became  
blue, beheld, not human beings— she had no tender memories, no  
profound illusions about Viceroys, Generals,

OXtines—it was orchids she saw, and mountain passes and herself  
carried on the backs of coolies in the 'sixties over solitary peaks; or  
descending to Xproot orchids (startling blossoms, never beheld  
before) which she painted in Zater-color; an indomitable  
Englishwoman, fretful if disturbed by the

war, say, which dropped a bomb at her very door, from her deep  
meditation over orchids and her own journeying in the  
'sixties in India—but here was Peter.

"Come and talk to Aunt Helena about Burma," said Clarissa. And  
yet he had not had a word with her all the evening!

"We will talk later," said Clarissa, leading him Xp to Aunt Helena, in  
her

Zhite shaZI, Zith her stick. "Peter :alsh," said Clarissa. That meant nothing.

Clarissa had asked her. It Zas tiring; it Zas noisy; bXt Clarissa had asked her. 6o she had come. It Zas a pity that they liYed in /ondon—5ichard and Clarissa. If only for Clarissa's health it ZoXld haYe been better to liYe in

the coXntry. BXt Clarissa had alZays been fond of society. "He has been in BXrma," said Clarissa.

Ah. 6he coXld not resist recalling Zhat Charles DarZin had said aboXt her little book on the orchids of BXrma.

(Clarissa mXst speak to /ady BrXton.)

1o doXbt it Zas forgotten noZ, her book on the orchids of BXrma, bXt it Zent into three editions before 1870, she told Peter. 6he remembered him noZ. He had been at BoXrton (and he had left her, Peter :alsh

remembered, ZithoXt a Zord in the draZing-room that night Zhen Clarissa had asked him to come boating).

"Richard so much enjoyed his lunch party," said Clarissa to Lady Brontë. "Richard was the greatest possible help," Lady Brontë replied. "He helped me to write a letter. And how are you?"

"Oh, perfectly well!" said Clarissa. (Lady Brontë detested illness in the  
society of politicians.)

"And there's Peter!"" said Lady Brontë (for she could never think of anything to say to Clarissa; though she liked her. She had lots of fine qualities; but they had nothing in common—she and Clarissa. It might have been better if Richard had married a woman with less charm, who would have helped him more in his work. He had lost his chance of the Cabinet). "There's Peter!" she said, shaking hands with that agreeable sinner, that very able fellow who should have made a name for himself but hadn't (always in difficulties with women), and, of course, old Miss Parry. Wonderful old lady!

Lady Brontë stood by Miss Parry's chair, a spectral grenadier, draped in black, inquiring of Peter: "alsh to LXnch; cordial; bXt ZithoXt small talk, remembering nothing ZhateYer aboXt the flora or faXna of India. 6he had been there, of coXrse; had stayed Zith three Viceroys; thoXght some of the Indian ciYilians Xncommonly fine felloZs; bXt Zhat a tragedy it Zas—the state of India! The Prime Oinister had jXst been telling her (old Miss Parry hXddled Xp in her shaZl, did not care Zhat the Prime Oinister had jXst been telling her), and Lady Brontë ZoXld like to haYe Peter:alsh's opinion, he being fresh from the centre, and she ZoXld get 6ir 6ampson to

meet him, for really it preYented her from sleeping at night, the folly of it, the Zickedness she might say, being a soldier's daXghter. 6he Zas an old Zoman noZ, not good for mXch. BXt her hoXse, her serYants, her good friend Oilly BrXsh—did he remember her?—Zere all there only asking to be Xsed if—if they coXld be of help, in short. For she neYer spoke of England, bXt this isle of men, this dear, dear land, Zas in her blood (ZithoXt reading 6hakespeare), and if eYer a Zoman coXld haYe Zorn the helmet and shot the arroZ, coXld haYe led troops to attack, rXled Zith indomitable jXstice barbarian hordes and lain Xnder a shield noseless in a chXrch, or made a green grass moXnd on some primeYal hillside, that Zoman Zas Oillicent Brontë. Debarred by her se[ and some trXancy, too, of the logical facXlty (she foXnd it

impossible to write a letter to the Times), she had the thought of Empire always at hand, and had retired from her association with that armed goddess her ramrod bearing, her robustness of demeanour, so that one could not figure her eyes in death parted from the earth or roaming territories over which, in some spiritual shape, the balloon had ceased to fly. To be not English eyes among the dead—no, no! Impossible!

But was it Lady Broughton (whom she used to know)? as it Peter Walsh groined grey? Lady Fosseter asked herself (who had been badly beaten). It was old Miss Parry certainly—the old aunt who used to be so cross when she stayed at Broughton. Why should she forget running along the passage

naked, and being sent for by Miss Parry! And Clarissa! oh Clarissa! badly caught her by the arm.

Clarissa stopped beside them.

"But I can't stay," she said. "I shall come later. Wait," she said, looking at Peter and Gally. They must wait, she meant, until all these people had gone.

"I shall come back," she said, looking at her old friends, Gally and Peter, Zhou Zere shaking hands, and Gally, remembering the past no doubt, was laughing.

But her voice was ringing of its old ringing richness; her eyes not gloom as they used to be, when she smoked cigars, when she ran down the passage to fetch her sponge bag, without a stitch of clothing on her, and Ellen Atkins asked, "What if the gentlemen had met her? But everybody forgave her. She stole a chicken from the larder because she was hungry in the night; she smoked cigars in her bedroom; she left a priceless book in the pocket. But everybody adored her (except perhaps Papa). It was her charm; her vitality—she would paint, she would write. Old women in the village never to this day forgot to ask after "your friend in the red cloak who seemed so bright." She accused Hugh Whitbread, of all people (and there he was, her old friend Hugh, talking to the Portuguese Ambassador), of kissing her in the smoking-room to punish her for



saying that Zomen shoXld haYe Yotes. VXlgar men did, she said. And Clarissa remembered haYing to persXade her not to denoXnce him at family prayers—Zhich she Zas capable of doing Zith her daring, her recklessness, her melodramatic loYe of being the centre of eYerything and creating scenes, and it Zas boXnd, Clarissa Xsed to think, to end in some aZfXI tragedy; her death; her martyrdom; instead of Zhich she had married, TXite Xne[pectedly, a bald man Zith a large bXttonhole Zho oZned, it Zas said, cotton mills at Manchester. And she had fiYe boys!

6he and Peter had settled doZn together. They Zere talking: it seemed so familiar—that they shoXld be talking. They ZoXld discXss the past. :ith the tZo of them (more eYen than Zith 5ichard) she shared her past; the garden; the trees; old -oseph Breitkopf singing Brahms ZithoXt any Yoice; the draZing-room Zallpaper; the smell of the mats. A part of this 6ally mXst alZays be; Peter mXst alZays be. BXt she mXst leaYe them. There Zere the BradshaZs, Zhom she disliked. 6he mXst go Xp to /ady BradshaZ (in grey and silYer, balancing like a sea-lion at the edge of its tank, barking for inYitations, DXchesses, the

typical successful man's wife), she must go up to Lady Bradshaw and say ...

But Lady Bradshaw anticipated her.

"You are shockingly late, dear Mrs. Dallorey, I hardly dared to come in," she said.

And Mr. William, who looked very distinguished, with his grey hair and blue eyes, said yes; they had not been able to resist the temptation. He was talking to Richard about that Bill probably, which they wanted to get through the Commons. Why did the sight of him, talking to Richard, excite her? He looked that he was, a great doctor. A man absolutely at the head of his profession, very powerful, rather stern. For think that cases came before him—people in the uttermost depths of misery; people on the verge of insanity; husbands and wives. He had to decide questions of appalling difficulty. Yet—that she felt was, one would not like Mr. William to see one unhappy. No; not that man.

"How is your son at Eton?" she asked /ady BradshaZ.

He had jXst missed his eleYen, said /ady BradshaZ, becaXse of the mXmps. His father minded eYen more than he did, she thoXght "being," she said, "nothing bXt a great boy himself."

Clarissa looked at 6ir :illiam, talking to 5ichard. He did not look like a boy—not in the least like a boy. 6he had once gone Zith some one to ask his adYice. He had been perfectly right; e[tremely sensible. BXt HeaYens

—Zhat a relief to get oXt to the street again! There Zas some poor Zretch sobbing, she remembered, in the Zaiting-room. BXt she did not knoZ Zhat it Zas—aboXt 6ir :illiam; Zhat e[actly she disliked. 2nly 5ichard agreed Zith her, "didn't like his taste, didn't like his smell." BXt he Zas e[traordinarily able. They Zere talking aboXt this Bill. 6ome case, 6ir

:illiam Zas mentioning, loZering his Yoice. It had its bearing Xpon Zhat

he was saying about the deferred effects of shell shock. There must be some provision in the Bill.

Linking her voice, drawing Mrs. Dallozay into the shelter of a common femininity, a common pride in the illustrious qualities of husbands and their sad tendency to overwork, Lady Bradshaw (poor goose—one didn't dislike her) remarked how, "just as we were starting, my husband was called up on the telephone, a very sad case. A young man (that is that girl

William is telling Mrs. Dallozay) had killed himself. He had been in the army." When thought Clarissa, in the middle of my party, here's death, she thought.

She went on, into the little room where the Prime Minister had gone with

Lady Brenton. Perhaps there was somebody there. But there was nobody. The chairs still kept the impress of the Prime Minister and Lady Brenton, she turned deferentially, he sitting forth-stare, authoritative. They had been talking about India. There was

nobody. The party's splendour fell to the floor, so strange it was to come in alone in her finery.

What business had the Bradshaws to talk of death at her party? A young man had killed himself. And they talked of it at her party—the Bradshaws, talked of death. He had killed himself—but how? Always her body went through it first, when she was told, suddenly, of an accident; her dress flamed, her body burnt. He had thrown himself from a window. She had flashed the ground; through him, blundering, brising, went the rusty spikes. There he lay with a thud, thud, thud in his brain, and then a suffocation of blackness. So she saw it. But why had he done it? And the Bradshaws talked of it at her party!

She had once thrown a shilling into the serpentine, never anything more. But he had fixed it away. They went on living (she would have to go back; the rooms were still crowded; people kept on coming). They (all day she had been thinking of Burton, of Peter, of Gally), they would grow old. A thing there was that mattered; a thing, breathed about with chatter, defaced, obscured in her own life, let drop every day in corruption, lies, chatter. This he had

preserved. Death was defiance. Death was an attempt to communicate; people feeling the impossibility of reaching the centre

Which, mystically, separated them; closeness drew apart; rapture faded, one

was alone. There was an embrace in death.

But this young man who had killed himself—had he plunged holding his treasure? "If it were not to die, 'twere not to be most happy," she had said to herself once, coming down in white.

Or there were the poets and thinkers. Suppose he had had that passion, and had gone to Sir William Bradshaw, a great doctor yet to her obscurely evil, with his seat or list, extremely polite to women, but capable of some indescribable outrage—forcing you so, that was it—if this young man had gone to him, and Sir William had impressed him, like that, with his power, might he not then have said (indeed she felt it not), /ife is made intolerable; they make life intolerable, men like that?

Then (she had felt it only this morning) there was the terror; the  
other's incapacity, one's parents giving it into one's hands,  
this life, to be lived to the end, to be walked with serenely; there  
was in the depths of her heart an awful fear. Even now, twice often  
if Richard had not been there reading the Times, so that she could  
creep like a bird and gradually reappear, send roaring up that  
immeasurable delight, rubbing stick to stick, one thing with  
another, she must have perished. But that young man had killed  
himself.

Somehow it was her disaster—her disgrace. It was her punishment  
to see sink and disappear here a man, there a woman, in this  
profound darkness, and she forced to stand here in her evening  
dress. He had schemed; she had pilfered. He was never wholly  
admirable. He had wanted success.

Andy Beborough and the rest of it. And once she had walked on  
the terrace at Barton.

It was due to Richard; she had never been so happy. Nothing could be so enough; nothing last too long. To please her could eternal, she thought, straightening the chairs, pushing in one book on the shelf, this having done with the triumphs of youth, lost herself in the process of lying, to find it, with a shock of delight, as the sun rose, as the day sank. Many a time had she gone, at Barton when they were all talking, to look at the sky; or seen it between people's shoulders at dinner; seen it in London when she could not sleep. She walked to the window.

It held, foolish as the idea was, something of her own in it, this country sky, this sky above Westminster. She parted the curtains; she looked. Ah, but how surprising!—in the room opposite the old lady stared straight at her! She was going to bed. And the sky. It will be a solemn sky, she had thought, it will be a dusky sky, turning away its cheek in beauty. But there it was—ashen pale, raced over quickly by tapering vast clouds. It was new to her. The wind must have risen. She was going to bed, in the room opposite. It was fascinating to watch her, moving about, that old lady, crossing the room, coming to the window. Could she see her? It was fascinating, with people still laughing and shouting in the drawing-room, to watch that old woman, quite quietly, going to



bed. He pulled the blind down. The clock began striking. The young man had killed himself; but she did not pity him; with the clock striking the hour, one, two, three, she did not pity him, with all this going on. There! the old lady had put out her light! the whole house was dark now with this going on, she repeated, and the Zords came to her, Fear no more the heat of the sun. He must go back to them. But what an extraordinary night! He felt somehow very like him

—the young man who had killed himself. He felt glad that he had done it; through it away. The clock was striking. The leaden circles dissolved in the air. He made her feel the beauty; made her feel the fun. But she must go back. He must assemble. He must find Bally and Peter. And she came in from the little room.

"But where is Clarissa?" said Peter. He was sitting on the sofa with Bally. (After all these years he really could not call her "Madam Sossiter.") "Where's the woman gone to?" he asked. "Where's Clarissa?"

ably supposed, and so did Peter for the matter of that, that there were people of importance, politicians, whom neither of them knew unless by sight in the picture papers, whom Clarissa had to be nice to, had to talk to.

She was with them. Yet there was Richard Dallozay not in the Cabinet. He hadn't been a success, ably supposed? For herself, she scarcely ever read the papers. She sometimes saw his name mentioned. But then—well, she lived a very solitary life, in the wilds, Clarissa would say, among great merchants, great manufacturers, men, after all, who did things. She had done things too!

"I have five sons!" she told him.

Lord, Lord, what a change had come over her! the softness of motherhood;

its egotism too. Last time they met, Peter remembered, had been among the calf-floes in the moonlight, the leaves "like rough bronze" she had said, with her literary turn; and she had picked a rose. She had marched him up and down that awful night, after the

scene by the fountain; he was to catch the midnight train.  
Heaven, he had slept!

That was his old trick, opening a pocket-knife, thoughtfully,  
always opening and shutting a knife when he got excited. They had  
been very,

very intimate, she and Peter Walsh, when he was in love with  
Clarissa, and there was that dreadful, ridiculous scene over  
Richard Dallozay at lunch.

She had called Richard "Richard." Why not call Richard "Richard"?  
Clarissa had flared up! and indeed they had never seen each other  
since, she and Clarissa, not more than half a dozen times perhaps  
in the last ten years. And Peter Walsh had gone off to India, and she  
had heard vaguely that he had made an unhappy marriage, and  
she didn't know whether he had any children, and she couldn't ask  
him, for he had changed. He was rather shriveled-looking, but  
kinder, she felt, and she had a real affection for him, for he was  
connected with her youth, and she still had a little Emily Brontë he  
had given her, and he was to write, surely? In those days he was to  
write.

"HaYe yoX Zritten?" she asked him, spreading her hand, her firm and shapely hand, on her knee in a Zay he recalled.

"1ot a Zord!" said Peter :alsh, and she laXghed.

6he Zas still attractiYe, still a personage, 6ally 6eton. BXt Zho Zas this

5osseter? He Zore tZo camellias on his Zedding day—that Zas all Peter kneZ of him. "They haYe myriads of serYants, miles of conserYatories," Clarissa Zrote; something like that. 6ally oZned it Zith a shoXt of laXgher.

"Yes, I haYe ten thoXsand a year"—Zhether before the ta[ Zas paid or

after, she coXldn't remember, for her hXsband, "Zhom yoX mXst meet," she said, "Zhom yoX ZoXld like," she said, did all that for her.

And 6ally Xsed to be in rags and tatters. 6he had paZned her grandmother's ring Zhich Oarie Antoinette had giYen her great-grandfather to come to BoXrton.

2h yes, 6ally remembered; she had it still, a rXby ring Zhich Oarie Antoinette had giYen her great-grandfather. 6he neYer had a penny to her name in those days, and going to BoXrton alZays meant some frightfXI pinch. BXt going to BoXrton had meant so mXch to her—had kept her sane, she belieYed, so Xnhappy had she been at home. BXt that Zas all a thing of the past—all oYer noZ, she said. And Or. Parry Zas dead; and Oiss Parry Zas still aliYe. 1eYer had he had sXch a shock in his life! said Peter. He had been TXite certain she Zas dead. And the marriage had been, 6ally sXpposed, a sXccess? And that Yery handsome, Yery self-possessed yoXng Zoman Zas Eli]abeth, oYer there, by the cXrtains, in red.

(6he Zas like a poplar, she Zas like a riYer, she Zas like a hyacinth,  
:illie

Titcomb was thinking. It was much nicer to be in the country and do what she liked! She could hear her poor dog howling, Elizabeth was certain.) She was not a bit like Clarissa, Peter Walsh said.

"Oh, Clarissa!" said Fanny.

That Fanny felt was simply this. She had loved Clarissa an enormous amount. They had been friends, not acquaintances, friends, and she still saw Clarissa all in white going about the house with her hands full of flowers—to this day tobacco plants made her think of Barton. But—did Peter understand?—she lacked something. Fanny asked what was it? She had charm; she had extraordinary charm. But to be frank (and she felt that Peter was an old friend, a real friend—did absence matter? did distance matter? She had often wanted to write to him, but torn it up, yet felt he understood, for people understand without things being said, as one realises growing old, and old she was, had been that afternoon to see her sons at Eton, where they had the exams), to be quite frank then, how could Clarissa have done it?—married Richard Dalrymple? a sportsman, a

man Zho cared only for dogs. /iterally, Zhen he came into the room he smelt of the stables. And then all this? 6he ZaYed her hand.

HXgh :hitbread it Zas, strolling past in his Zhite Zaistcoat, dim, fat, blind, past eYerything he looked, e[cept self-esteem and comfort.

"He's not going to recognise us," said 6ally, and really she hadn't the coXrage—so that Zas HXgh! the admirable HXgh!

"And Zhat does he do?" she asked Peter.

He blacked the .ing's boots or coXnted bottles at :indsor, Peter told her. Peter kept his sharp tongXe still! BXt 6ally mXst be frank, Peter said. That kiss noZ, HXgh's.

On the lips, she assured him, in the smoking-room one evening.  
She went straight to Clarissa in a rage. "Hugh didn't do such things!"  
Clarissa said, the admirable Hugh! Hugh's socks were the most beautiful she had ever seen—and not his evening dress. Perfect! And had he children?

"Everybody in the room has six sons at Eton," Peter told her, except himself. He, thank God, had none. No sons, no daughters, no wife. Well, he didn't seem to mind, said Gally. He looked younger, she thought, than any of them.

But it had been a silly thing to do, in many ways, Peter said, to marry like that; "a perfect goose she was," he said, but he said, "She had a splendid time of it," but how could that be? Gally wondered; what did he mean? and how odd it was to know him and yet not know a single thing that had happened to him. And did he say it out of pride? Very likely, for after all it must be galling for him (though he was an oddity, a sort of sprite, not at all an ordinary man), it must be lonely at his age to have no home,



noZhere to go to. BXt he mXst stay Zith them for Zeeks and Zeeks. 2f coXrse he ZoXld; he ZoXld loYe to stay Zith them, and that Zas hoZ it came oXt. All these years the DalloZays had neYer been once. Time after time they had asked them. Clarissa (for it Zas Clarissa of coXrse) ZoXld not come. For, said 6ally, Clarissa Zas at heart a snob—one had to admit it, a snob. And it

Zas that that Zas betZeen them, she Zas conYinced. Clarissa thoXght she had married beneath her, her hXsband being—she Zas proXd of it—a miner’s son. EYery penny they had he had earned. As a little boy (her Yoice trembled) he had carried great sacks.

(And so she ZoXld go on, Peter felt, hoXr after hoXr; the miner’s son; people thoXght she had married beneath her; her fiYe sons; and Zhat Zas the other thing—plants, hydrangeas, syringas, Yery, Yery rare hibiscXs lilies that neYer groZ north of the 6Xe] Canal, bXt she, Zith one gardener in a sXbXrb near 0anchester, had beds of them, positiYely beds! 1oZ all that Clarissa had escaped, Xnmaternal as she Zas.)

A snob Z as she? Yes, in many Zays. :here Z as she, all this time? It Z as getting late.

"Yet," said 6ally, "Zhen I heard Clarissa Z as giYing a party, I felt I coXldn't not come—mXst see her again (and I'm staying in Victoria 6treet, practically ne[t door). 6o I jXst came ZithoXt an inYitation. BXt," she Zhispered, "tell me, do. :ho is this?"

It Z as Ors. Hilbery, looking for the door. For hoZ late it Z as getting! And, she mXrmXred, as the night greZ later, as people Zent, one foXnd old friends; TXiet nooks and corners; and the loYeliest YieZs. Did they knoZ, she asked, that they Zere sXrroXnded by an enchanted garden? /ights and trees and ZonderfXI gleaming lakes and the sky. -Xst a feZ fairy lamps, Clarissa DalloZay had said, in the back garden! BXt she Z as a magician! It Z as a park... . And she didn't knoZ their names, bXt friends she kneZ they Zere, friends ZithoXt names, songs ZithoXt Zords, alZays the best. BXt there Zere so many doors, sXch Xne[pected places, she coXld not find her Zay.

"2ld Ors. Hilbery," said Peter; bXt Zho Zas that? that lady standing by the cXrtain all the eYening, ZithoXt speaking? He kneZ her face; connected her Zith BoXrton. 6Xrely she Xsed to cXt Xp Xnderclothes at the large table in the ZindoZ? DaYidson, Zas that her name?

"2h, that is Ellie Henderson," said 6ally. Clarissa Zas really Yery hard on her. 6he Zas a coXsin, Yery poor. Clarissa was hard on people.

6he Zas rather, said Peter. Yet, said 6ally, in her emotional Zay, Zith a rXsh of that enthXsiasm Zhich Peter Xsed to loYe her for, yet dreaded a little noZ, so effXsiYe she might become—hoZ generoXs to her friends Clarissa Zas! and Zhat a rare TXality one foXnd it, and hoZ sometimes at night or on Christmas Day, Zhen she coXnted Xp her blessings, she pXt that friendship first. They Zere yoXng; that Zas it. Clarissa Zas pXre-hearted; that Zas it. Peter ZoXld think her sentimental. 6o she Zas. For she had come to feel that it Zas the only thing Zorth saying—Zhat one felt. CleYerness Zas silly. 2ne mXst say simply Zhat one felt.

"But I do not know," said Peter, "that I feel."

Poor Peter, thought Eliza. Why did not Clarissa come and talk to them? That was what he was longing for. She knew it. All the time he was thinking only of Clarissa, and was fidgeting with his knife.

He had not found life simple, Peter said. His relations with Clarissa had not been simple. It had spoiled his life, he said. (They had been so intimate

—he and Eliza, it was absurd not to say it.) She could not be in love with her, he said. And what could she say? Still, it is better to have loved (but he would think her sentimental—he used to be so sharp). He must come and stay with them in Manchester. That is all very true, he said. All very true. He would love to come and stay with them, directly he had done what he had to do in London.

And Clarissa had cared for him more than she had ever cared for Richard.

How was she of that.

"No, no, no!" said Peter (how should not have said that—she went too far). That good fellow—there he was at the end of the room, holding forth, the same as ever, dear old Richard. Who was he talking to? How asked, that very distinguished-looking man? /iYing in the Zilds as she did, she had an insatiable curiosity to know who people were. But Peter did not know. He did not like his looks, he said, probably a Cabinet Minister. Of them all, Richard seemed to him the best, he said—the most disinterested.

"But what has he done?" How asked. Public Zork, she supposed.

And were they happy together? How asked (she herself was extremely happy); for,

she admitted, she knew nothing about them, only jumped to conclusions,

as one does, for what can one know even of the people one lives with every day? she asked. Are we not all prisoners? How had read

a ZonderfXI play aboXt a man Zho scratched on the Zall of his cell, and she had felt that

Zas trXe of life—one scratched on the Zall. Despairing of hXman relationships (people Zere so difficXlt), she often Zent into her garden and got from her floZers a peace Zhich men and Zomen neYer gaYe her. BXt no; he did not like cabbages; he preferred hXman beings, Peter said.

Indeed, the yoXng are beaXtifXI, 6ally said, Zatching Elijabeth cross the room. HoZ Xnlike Clarissa at her age! CoXld he make anything of her? 6he ZoXld not open her lips. 1ot mXch, not yet, Peter admitted. 6he Zas like a lily, 6ally said, a lily by the side of a pool. BXt Peter did not agree that Ze knoZ nothing. :e knoZ eYerything, he said; at least he did.

BXt these tZo, 6ally Zhispered, these tZo coming noZ (and really she mXst go, if Clarissa did not come soon), this distingXished-looking man and his rather common-looking Zife Zho had been talking to 5ichard— Zhat coXld one knoZ aboXt people like that?

"That they're damnable hXmbXgs," said Peter, looking at them casXally. He made 6ally laXgh.

BXt 6ir :illiam BradshaZ stopped at the door to look at a pictXre. He looked in the corner for the engraYer's name. His Zife looked too. 6ir

:illiam BradshaZ Zas so interested in art.

:hen one Zas yoXng, said Peter, one Zas too mXch e[cited to knoZ people. 1oZ that one Zas old, fifty-tZo to be precise (6ally Zas fifty-fiYe, in body, she said, bXt her heart Zas like a girl's of tZenty); noZ that one Zas matXre then, said Peter, one coXld Zatch, one coXld Xnderstand, and one did not lose the poZer of feeling, he said. 1o, that is trXe, said 6ally.

6he felt more deeply, more passionately, eYery year. It increased, he said, alas, perhaps, bXt one shoXld be glad of it—it Zent on increasing in his e[perience. There Zas some one in India. He ZoXld like to tell 6ally aboXt her. He ZoXld like 6ally to knoZ her. 6he Zas married, he said. 6he had tZo small children. They mXst all come to 0anchester, said 6ally—he mXst promise before they left.

There's Eli]abeth, he said, she feels not half Zhat Ze feel, not yet. B]ut, said bally, Zatching Eli]abeth go to her father, one can see they are de]voted to each other. b]ut he co]uld feel it by the Zay Eli]abeth Zent to her father.

For her father had been looking at her, as he stood talking to the Bradsha]s, and he had tho]ught to himself, :ho is that lo]vely girl? And s]uddenly he realised that it Zas his Eli]abeth, and he had not recognised her, she looked so lo]vely in her pink frock! Eli]abeth had felt him looking at her as she talked to :illie Titcomb. b]ut she Zent to him and they stood together, no]t that the party Zas almost o]ver, looking at the people going, and the rooms getting emptier and emptier, Zith things scattered on the floor. E]ven Ellie Henderson Zas going, nearly last of all, tho]ugh no one had spoken to her, b]ut she had Zanted to see e]verything, to tell Edith. And :ichard and Eli]abeth Zere rather glad it Zas o]ver, b]ut :ichard Zas pro]ud of his da]ughter. And he had not meant to tell her, b]ut he co]uld not help telling her. He had looked at her, he said, and he had Zondered, :ho is that lo]vely girl? and it Zas his da]ughter! That did make her happy. B]ut her poor dog Zas ho]ling.



"Richard has improved. You are right," said Sally. "I shall go and talk to him. I shall say goodnight. What does the brain matter," said Lady

Sosseter, getting up, "compared with the heart?"

"I will come," said Peter, but he sat on for a moment. What is this terror? What is this ecstasy? he thought to himself. What is it that fills me with extraordinary excitement?

It is Clarissa, he said. For there she was.

**InfoBooks.org**

